

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Prologue

Meet Pretty Molokai. An insecure 17 year old girl who is currently doing her 12th grade at Maria Zell at Matatiale. It's a boarding school in the province of Eastern Cape. Back at home she lives with her mom, dad, sister and brother and she is originally from Queenstown. Going to boarding was definitely not on her mind and hated the idea but her mother forced her because "it's for your own good". As a result she suffered from depression. Of course one wouldn't say they have depression to a black parent! Depression is reserved for white people ! Not blacks not my handwriting.

She is skinny which makes her height quite noticeable. Thus she classifies herself as "tall". Her body structure is quite average, small boobs, ass nor hips. But something about her small features makes her feel uncomfortable and insecure. She mostly feels left out because everyone seems perfect and she's not. She has Friends who are just perfect. Saying she's some

one important at school would be an offence. She's not a head girl or anything like that not even top of class

Have you ever met someone who is desperate to have friends ?
Well listen to what she has to say about herself

"I am Friends with my Friends because I help them with homework. I attend an English Club and I am the leader there. My life is dull. Sometimes I just wish I could ...die coz I feel I don't make an Impact."

1

Growing up wasn't much of trouble I mean I was happy I used to play with other kids and just be happy but now I feel like I am an additional piece in the group of friends I have. Thinking that I have this huge crush on Mihle Mthethwa is a whole entire Joke. Mihle Mthethwa, tall young man who is handsome with the most gorgeous smile any girl can die for. His lips, the way he carries himself.

"Yes, Pretty" Miss Pillay looked at me with anticipation. I could sense numerous eyes staring at me. I didn't hear anything of what she just said

"Um...What was the question again ma'am?" I asked scared of being thrown out for the fifth time since schools reopened last week.

"Clearly you are not listening, get out of my classroom "

This is highly expected of me. Argh I don't know how I'll ever stop daydreaming.

Lisa, Bonke and Melissa are my friends but they just burst out laughing. So much for being called friends but they are all I have.

“Please ma’am can I stay I mean ...ma’am” I begged

“Out you go”

I got up from my chair, shyly looking down trying to ignore the sneers and stares my classmates were giving me.

I stood next to the class afraid

This will be the most boring 29 minutes of my life once more. I ended up playing with my fingers, twisting the middle finger against the thumb. A figure later stood opposite me. When lifting my eyes up... my crush. Okay let me describe him

Dark complexion, he is the rudest person I know got curls and tall. He’s got those clear black eyes and brackets. And he is the Head boy I am so stupid to fall for him. Honestly I can’t help it but smile inside when I see him. I always have these weird conversations I would create with him Imaginary preparing for when I actually talk to him. And now is actually the time.

“Pretty why are you standing there?” Wow he knows my name!!!! How did he? Oh my God

For a second I didn’t know what to say but just stare at him speechless.

“Y...f...” I tried

“You’re okay?”

“How did you know my name?”

I managed to blurt that out.

OMG how embarrassing

He chuckled

“Come on we’ve been here since grade 8 and we are in 12th grade now come on “he pointed that out

“Oh um...”

“So tell me what happened? Why are you outside?” Asking out of curiosity

“Ma’am sent me out happy now Mihle Mthethwa and I am so stupid I shouldn’t have been daydreaming about y... home and I cannot do that work alone especially mathematics argh I am so stupid...I am so sorry for blurting out like this I am...(whispering) so stupid

He simply chuckled. What is he laughing at?

“Look um just give me your number then I can see where I can help ok. And don’t worry you are not stupid.”

“No need to make me think I am better. Either way”

I said as I wrote my number on his book he just gave me.

“Thanks” I said.

At break I went to sit at my spot under the tree and chilled there I mostly sit alone during break and no one usually bothers to come and sit with me

Advertisement

it's not that I am complaining. I saw Melissa and Lisa walking past the Tuck shop so I went to them.

"I tell you chomie this Friday we are there" Said Lisa to both Melissa and Bonke

"Hey" I disturbed them on their hot news

"Chomie Well we will be there Siphos hosts the best parties ever" Melissa added

"What's that?" I asked curiously

"Don't bother" ouch did Lisa have to place it like that.

Melissa laughed so hard. And her laughter is contagious so Lisa also laughed

Melissa looked at me with those 'You're unbelievable eyes'

"Imagine chomie, her trying to skip the fence "

"Pretty just keep on being the good girl and be that leader in 'English club "'

They burst out laughing once again. I was so hurt, it's not that it's the first time they speak like this to me but this time around they made it worse and so I ran to the toilets, locked the toilet I was in and cried. Why am I always not good enough?

Know what I'll prove it to them that I am worth to be their friend.

In no time school was over. I started doing my homework Maths and I don't understand a thing. Melissa gets in with Lisa

“What are you doing? Let me guess Homework. Last time we had wrong answers but this time around I don’t want to have any wrong answers okay”

Melissa has that deep hoarse voice that makes me so scared but I try hiding my terror.

“I am not a robot I don’t know all the answers how can I possibly know al “

Lisa intervened “Find a way. So you’ll give the work same time same place. Toddles Good Girl”

Heads up, chest out and they walked swinging their hips side to side.

‘So where will I start I know nothing “

After a few minutes my head was throbbing, Math who created this subject though.

Right then the Head boy decided to disturb me.

“Sorry but the principal says everyone must go “

“Does it really have to be like that? Seriously? I have tons of homework I should finish this today.”

“I am so sorry can you close the windows.”

“No it’s your job not mine”

I packed my books when I was about to walk out of the door

“Are you for real? “ He asked in disbelief

“Yes. Listen here I am no one’s mistress okay!!

And I was so freaking angry that I am unable to tell those ‘Friends’ that.

I went to the hostel and changed to a short skit and jeans and a top.

I then went to the study to do my homework. I managed to finish although I didn't know a lot of stuff. As I wrote I thought of this failure I am like I don't even know a simple sum I almost cried holding the pen loosely not noting the mess I was making on my book.

"Oh crap, now I have to start over. "Tears rolled down my eyes.

During study time I did my English homework while I sent my math homework to my 'Friends'. The bell rang indicating the end of study time and so we went back to our dorms and changed to our night dresses before night prayer.

Once we were asleep by that mean all of us in bed. I read my WhatsApp messages underneath the blanket.

One from a number, OMG Mihle I know it's a girly name but WTF it's the head boy.

0756*****

Online

'Hey this is Mihle. I saw your Math script and I'd say I was pleased.'

I was so happy Just Imagine a text from your crush... I didn't know what to say so I was like hmmm umm

Okay, I typed

'Come on 40% on a test its bad.'

'It's not bad trust me '

'You are a level 7 student come on you can't say that.'

Typing

'You are capable of achieving that too so tell me have you done your homework yet?'

'Yes but only a few things I knew'

'I am more than willing to help'

He helped me have correct answers.

Since it was dark I had a touch. I wrote. He gave more tips and I suddenly felt bad for treating him bad lately

'If you need any help you can come to my class I'll be there'

'Oh okay Thanks'

'Pleasure'

So I got a problem

I have the right answers and my 'Friends' have wrong answers.

Anyway I also have a party to attend so I planned that on my mind while I started falling asleep

2

I am the girl who one would mistake for a shy person but turns out to be ironic. I am talkative yeah but also reserved. I sometimes feel very insecure of me well because I feel like I'm not got enough and that I don't fit. I try distancing myself and it turns out to be an awesome experience ever but then again I go the same circle.

Either way I have decided that I will go to this party and no one will know

The following morning the bell waking us up rang. I quickly wore my gown and took my toiletries then ran for my life to the bathroom so I can be first at the shower. I don't like people staring at me when I take a shower so I always take the last shower in the row. In 5 min I stepped out of the shower, wiping my face properly.

At my dorm I lotioned no one was there yet and some people were sleeping. Once I finished lotioning I wore my uniform right when others came.

“Haibo girl where are you going?” Asked Sbahle

“What’s the rush? Really?” Emphased Zintle

‘Yekan omnye umntana Nina

(Leave another child alone)” At least Hlele has something nice to say

I made my bed quietly ignoring them

“Uyaphi na? (Where are you going?) “Lizi also decided to interfere. I can’t believe also her is like them now I thought she was cool.

“Study room is where I am going” finally having the courage to answer them with the intentions of being rude but I just can’t find the right words.

Zintle gave me a blank stare before speaking “Since when are you a bookworm?”

They all burst laughing.

She continued “you make me laugh Pretty”

“Leave another child alone haw” once again Hlele intervened.

I took my bag pack and went out

“Bye bookworm she doesn’t even pass that well.”

I heard laughter

Quietly walked to the study room standing at the door for a second before taking a deep breath and opened the door. There was no one and so I sat down and cried. I am such a laughing stock. And now I am called a bookworm. I will prove them wrong. I will work because I want to pass well.

I took my math book, textbook and tried practicing and got stuck so I left those. I don’t even know where I will ask. Well Mihle said I should go to his class.

After math period it was break.

“Hey” I lifted my head only to see Lisa and Melissa in front of me.

“How are you” for a change Melissa was smiling at me.

I was so scared because I know I will be scolded now. Cool down Pretty. Yeah ok I am fine I won't cry

“Hey” I greeted back

Lisa said “girl what happened? You get recognized by teachers now? Huh”

Oh that was because I was the only one who got a certain math problem correct...Now I am dead meat.

“I copied from someone sorry guys it wasn't my intentions to.”
Trying to defend myself

“Oh so for your apology to be accepted you have to give us R200” snarled Lisa

Just because I wanted to be their friends so bad, I gave them my extra class money

“Here you go” I handed the money over.

“Am I forgiven?”

“Sure” said Lisa

She had that evil smile. I don't care as long as I am friends with them.

“Let's go to the tuck shop. “ Said Lisa

“Can I go with you? “ I looked at Lisa

“If you have money”

“Oh “

“Yes darling” who asked for Melissa’s input Argh.

Out they went so No one to follow around. I took my Life science book and read.

So today is Friday and usually after break no teacher gets in so I continued reading till school was over.

I stayed after school since I was not attending physics well because I gave my friends the money.

I did physics then Mihle (head boy came in) my heart skipped a beat. I mean that is my crush hello

“Oh you again please close the Windows when you go out “

“I am not a prefect so no.”

“Come on Pretty “

“Nope “

“Fine I’ll do it myself.”

“You know I can close them only if you help me with this.”

I took out my math book. Oh my Gosh when did I have such courage.

“Blackmail I see”

“No help me out or me “

“Okay fine” he said finally giving in.

He helped me with a lot of stuff. And gave me exercises it was also fun. He’s such a cool person not the version I used to see.

“Then the answer is 4, got it?”

“Can you repeat this step?”

“Is it this one?” He looked at me for assurance and I nodded

“Okay divide by 2 then its 4”

“Okay I see “ I looked at him with puppy eyes “thanks “

He simply chuckled at my comment, sending chills down my spine. When he looked at my eyes for a second I felt electrified wished he could stare at me like that all the time.

“Dude, why are you looking at me like that? “ He asked playfully. I suddenly felt the temperature raising um I’m what am I going to say. I smiled as he turned to the window

“It’s getting dark “

“What’s the time?” Finally I can speak phew

He looks at his wrist. As he looked I could see collar bone showing. He looks so fine.

Him: um...what!! 18: 34

I came back to my senses when he mentioned the time.

“No way, I will be kicked out of the hostel”

“Um...I don’t know but I think you should spend the night at my house.”

“No ...no...that is so ...so stupid Mihle how can you say that? I don’t know you

Advertisement

let alone trust you to even ... No “I mean it would be good but I don’t want to show him that I like him I mean. I mean

“I have an idea. Let’s go.” He said

~

“Look tell them you were at the clinic and your dad was here. I will act like your dad, now go.”

And the trick worked. I was now at the study all eyes on me because apparently I came late. Ignoring the eyes I took my math book and I went through what Mihle and I were doing. Physics.

Study was over I got in my dorm and people asking me where I was. I told them the clinic story. After night prayers I went to the toilets I was the only one there or so I thought.

As I was washing my hands Amanda came in

“Great. Got the right person at the right time”

She whispered “I know you were with my man all along, I need you to stay away from him, would you do that for me.”

That took me by shock, how did she know? No one saw us there

Beep a message from Mihle “Still up? need any help, how did it go, are you all right?” I stared at the message for a few seconds then Amanda noticed I wasn’t paying attention to her.

“What’s that? Is it him “she said taking the phone away from my hand

“Hey that’s mine; you can't “I tried reaching for it as she was already sticking her ugly eyes on my phone.

“What!!!” She screamed as she looked at me with complete astonishment.

“Listen to me and listen to me carefully, stay away from him and in fact” he pressed something on my phone furiously.

“Deleted” she showed me the screen saying Deleted

“Stay away from him “

She gave me my phone

“Clear!”

“Clear”

I was kind of hurt and scared at the same time. I promise myself not to cross paths with Mihle Mthethwa.

3

I have never been so afraid in my life. I mean the way she looked at me was like she was going to kill me.

~

I watched the other girls prepare for the party only I and the other two girls were in their beds the others were preparing. Bo Lodi and Lizi were busy putting make up.

Zintle: chomie that dress is way too long I can get you another one. The butt needs to be all out kalokuu haibo uMihle uzokubona njani ngokuu

Oh so Hlali also has a crush on Mihle

Hlali: Many girls have a crush on him he'll never even notice me.

Zintle: that's way you have to show that butt. Girl

~

Lizo: so we use the fence or the drain.

Zintle: fence will do.

Mila: let's go girls.

Zintle: Girl those legs are fresh

Mila: girl I still have my V card

Zintle: oh kanene we have 4 virgin Marries in this room.

Hlali: Girl you can't leave high school a virgin like it's not normal.

Zintle: total turn off.

Mila: I am planning on losing my virginity on Mihle like he's the sweetheart or my boyfriend Thabo.

Hlali: ah ha not on my Mihle.

Mila: he needs fresh legs. He's not yours, let's go girls.

~

After few minutes I stood up and went to my locker.

Inga: where are you going?

Me: party

Inga: it's dangerous –

Me: you only live once. I MEAN it may be the first and last high school party come on I want to live my life here.

Inga: okay

I wore a black shirt with black ripped jeans. I tire my hair into a neat bun.

Inga: you're going to wear that? A crop top will do.

Me: I am fine this way. Bye

I went out the same route as the others. And when arrived there

Advertisement

the music stopped and all eyes were on me

Lisa: chomie you made it!!!

My friends came to hug me. The music played again. I was so damn nervous like really. I was worried about getting caught and all that. But I must enjoy myself here.

I sat at the bar with Bonke, Lisa and Melissa.

Melissa: you turned us down I mean I thought you wouldn't come.

Lisa: four vodkas please.

Waiter: here ma'am

Lisa: here's for you Pretty girl

Me: should I drink this

Bonke: yes girl in a count of 3

Lisa: 3

Melissa: 2

Bonke: 1

I drank this thing is so strong. They laughed.

Lisa: so much for a first time. Let's grab a drink and dance

Melissa gave me a drink and we went to the dance floor Love on top by Beyoncé played and we all dancing. When I turned I saw Mihle and his girl Amanda making out. Mihle was facing my side and Amanda another side when he got a glance of me I quickly looked away and danced with my friends.

I could feel my intestines burning but I let it slide I came here to have fun. I continued drinking and dancing. Some guy I think it's Sabelo came to dance with me.

Sabelo: hello there

Me: hi

Sabelo: can I get you a drink?

Me: sure

All my friends have just disappeared through thin air. Haibo oh Sabelo came back and gave me the drink which I did not trust one bit.

Me: I feel tired can we go sit down.

We went to the couches once I sat down I caught Mihle's eyes he was talking to Amanda well Amanda was talking to herself coz he wasn't listening. He was concentrated.

Me: look at that

Sabelo looked and I swiped the glasses. He can't poison himself can he? I took a sip then he looked at me and I smiled.

Me: I think I need the bathroom.

I finished up my beer then went to the bathroom to do my business. Since it was outside I had a long walk back to the house.

Voice: Pretty

Why is that sounds like Mihle. I shouldn't be talking to him or else Amanda will kill me.

Mihle: what are you doing here?

Me: who are you to ask me what I am doing? Mihle ... Just keep your distance ...

I think I saw Amanda passing so I quickly rushed inside.

Mihle: Pretty you can't just le

I went in one of the rooms someone must have followed me coz someone pushed the door open. It was Sabelo and he was high.

Me: don't you dare get near me

He locked the door and I screamed I rushed to the door. He hit me with something I almost fell, no if I fall he'll take advantage of me so I took something and bit him with it. He fell on the bed and I could see he was injured. I took other things like pillow and bit him

Sabelo: fuck pretty!!

Me: I don't give a damn!!

Sabelo: ahh!!!

Me: bleeding!

Sabelo: come on baby.

The way I was running away from him someone would swear we were having the deed. I crawled on the bed then took the key and opened when I did everyone was there surprised.

My shirt messed up and the bed so bad and there was a little blood oh I hit Sabelo on his arm he got scared

Me: I just broke my virginity. Now stop looking at me I need pills.

I lied to them coz they seemed so curious. I mean I still have my v card. If I haven't defended myself he would've took advantage of me and look at me now. Taking advantage of this situation. At least Ill seem cool

Some people were recording.

My friends were still gone but Lisa showed up when I was sitting on the couch drinking yet again on another bedroom.

Lisa: so no more virgin Marry.

Me: yeah

I drank again

The way I was so drunk I couldn't even hear what I was saying anymore

?: where is she?

Mihle again and he got in.

After that I blacked out and when I woke up after what felt like ages.

“She’s awake”

I’ve never been so confused where am I. But I am sure I am in good hands. Where on earth am I? I looked around

“She decided to wake up.”

4

I woke up . Where on earth am I . I looked around

?: she decided to wake up .

The bell rang.

Oh that's Inga

Inga: girl its dining hall time.

Breakfast is served at 08:30 here and once the dormitorys are closed then one is locked in . So I guess I will be locked here .

Me: what!!

Inga: hurry up besides sister (The nun) is calling you.

Me: what no way ...

I quickly woke up and showered . I went back to the dorm when I looked through the window everything is settled but only a few people are going in the hall.

Inga was in the dorm and clothes were already in the bed so I wore and we went downstairs quickly to the hall and we were late.

Anti scolded us for being late

Anti: umntu kaloku aske azithande fanele sinilinde yena ke thina.

Me: xolo Anti

My head was pounding. When I walked in the Grade 12 hall there were whispers some looking at me .

I and Inga sat down at some table. Lisa and Bonke came

Bonke: chomie !!

Lisa: chomami. How are you?

Me: right you

Lisa: sick my head

Bonke: iyasinda yho!!

Soon the bell rang indicating the end of dining hall time.

I and Inga ate quickly.

Manuals started. I sweep at the church #manual are chores from 09:00-1100# then after Singing .

Sunday

.

We went to church after church we had dinner which is my favourite meal coz we eat meat.

I sat with Inga

Me: hey thanks for today you helped out a lot

Inga: pleasure...so its true Sabelo ...

I nodded and felt guilty .I mean I am lying here

~

My head was really bad . I still had to go to sister -(The nun).

I knocked at her office

Sister: good thing you came I thought you weren't coming .

Me: good day sister

Sister : I called you to tell you that you are given A warning .
You ,went to a party yesterday which is against the hostel rules
so once I see you do anything again . NR now get out . I also
told your parents .

-NR^Never Return-

~

The least I can do right now is study and studying hard. I was so
anxious I mean mom will freak out and as for dad kill me !!!

From 14:00

I sat at the corner of the study and read till 17:00. I continued
reading till 18:00 which was dining hall time.

I was so scared of mom . My sudden popularity

My friends

My family in fact

~

At the dining hall I sat with my friends.

Lisa: chomie where were you?

Me: chatting ...with ah my other friends./I lied/

Bonke: still haven't told us about the breaking of your V card

Melissa: painful I know

Me: oh that...ha ha um It was not how I planned it I mean at a party and Sabelo at that. And yeah so extreme painful

Bonke: that boy is a fuckboy you know . He fucks and leaves like ...guys I am pregnant

Lisa burst out laughing .

She continued laughing until she saw we were serious.

Lisa: no way girl.

Bonke: he is the father. But then Pretty you can date him I mean he is hot ...and besides popular .

Lisa: and also you Pretty . You are 'the talk ' now . Every girl envies you. And this Mihle guy seems to be on your watch

Bonke: yeah

Melissa: saw him at the party?

Lisa: the way he was looking at you

Bonke: poor Amanda

Me: oh really (😏 sarcastic)

Honestly I did not want popularity. I know they are lying .why do people always say stuff to satisfy me argh such bores

I know Mihle wouldn't even look at me that way

Monday

After the morning routine .I went to the dining hall and ate in a rush as I had a morning class

I knew a lot of stuff coz I studied yesterday and had 1 hour of math at the morning.Still struggling.

~

Lisa: chomie thanks we had all the correct answers . How did you do it ?

Me: I copied again

Lisa: (laughed) hayi uyangena kengok you are a dog girl

We high fived.

We went out to the tuck shop. Where I meet Mihle. He looked at me with those eyes I avoided eye contact and started a conversation with Lisa.

~

English Teacher: Pretty come with me please . Class dismissed.

I went

.

Teacher: I want you to pick out debaters with you involved .We are going to George next week.

Me: yes teacher.

I was so thrilled .

~

After school

I closed the Windows then went to the Libri. I should avoid Mihle at all costs.

I took out my books

30 min later the door opened.

?: someone here. No one so nice studying alone . Quiet pity
Pretty isn't here

--

I heard steps coming my way I hid by the book shelf.

Him: books? Someone here? Oh let me guess . Pretty show yourself.

And he found me

Mihle: are you avoiding me?

Me: no I was um... Searching for a book .

Mihle: oh really?

Me: yeah

He took a step closer .

I grabbed a book and held it tight on my chest.

He took another step.

Him: oh. Look at me in the eye tell me you ...now what you are doing isn't healthy Pretty I see a future when I look at you.

Don't destroy yourself. You are so full of life and triumph ...oh Pretty if only you saw yourself the way I see you .Tell me what happened

Advertisement

you party ?Pretty you broke your...your-

Me: I didn't Sabelo was high and he almost drugged me and he locked me up luckily I managed to escape his trap. I lied I still will even to his face

You don't have to believe me . And you don't have to say nice stuff to me I don't deserve it.

I was kinda nervous my voice shaky

He put his hand on my face

Him: where you avoiding me?

Me: No ...Amanda told me to leave you alone so I did. I mean she does make sense I mean I know I am ugly you don't have to help me I am a burden to people

Tear escaped .

I am such a bad per-

Suddenly his lips smashed on mine. Oh my God I can't even kiss properly. He pulled out and smiled. Then again this time I responded it grow to a passionate kiss

?: Mihle!!

I looked and it was Amanda.

She is going to kill me!!!

I quickly went to pack my books . Amanda approached me and attempted slapping me

Hed: bitch!! You ... You are trying to take away my man. Go to Sabelo your precious boyfriend . You think you can can be opening legs for everyone well not my man!! Yo-

I slapped her. Oh my God I did not do that, did I

Mihle: stop okay!!

Amanda: babe this bitch slapped me

Mihle: she's not a bitch . We need to talk

As he pulled her outside and I took my books and ran out . I was so damn afraid. I just slapped someone

5

Mihle's Pov

I pulled Amanda outside .

Me: you can't go on calling people names Amanda come on how disrespectful can you be .

Amanda: oh now you see disrespectful people while you go kissing that slut-

Me: she's not a slut!

Amanda: whatever Mihle !! Why did you do that what do you see in her that I don't have

She was at the verge of crying. I felt sorry for her like I don't even love her that much but I dated her to impress my dad and I am not planning on ending this relationship any time soon . I saw Pretty running for her life . That girl is so naive shame . But either way I like her . She's so damn innocent and committed and loving which is why I would so damn like to be with her in future I mean for the rest of my life . She's is amazing and I believe she's multitalanted even though she doesn't see that

yet. And the kiss!!! Damn I flopped big time I shouldn't have done that biggest mistake eva . It would be more like I am taking advantage of her. And I don't want that our relationship must be kept at a very high professional manner.

Me: babe I am so sorry It was a mistake . I don't see her that way . Come on

And she pouted

Me: ah you're so cute when you pout

She blushed .

Me: babe please look at me .

I moved her chin to face me .

Me: I chose you and you only . That kiss was a mistake .I guess my hormones were all over the place with everything happening at home .

Amanda: But babe I hate her . She's bad for us you can't jus keep on chatting with her . I mean she is the school whore and sh-

Me: and I am not going to tolerate you insulting her

Amanda: you love her?!!(Mad)

Me: No Amanda No okay know what I am done here

Amanda: so you love her?

Me: ...I said no

Amanda: that's enough for me coz she can't take you away from me . That slut -

Me: stop !!

Amanda: slu-

I jus walked away

Amanda: we are still talking here

Mihle: I have to rush somewhere

Seriously I don't have time for this.

Pretty POV

I ran to the hostel and got to the study and cried gosh I am so crazy . I cried till my head hurt. I went back to the dorm

Zintle: nasi islay queen esitsha

Hlali: girl you still have to tell us the whole story.

Lodi: I didn't even know she went there .

Zintle: so much from nyan nyan

Lizo: so tell us the dits(details)

Me: not in the mood

Lizo: are you pregnant?

Me: no

Zintle: come on Lizo so early .

Hlali: did it hurt?

They asked me a lot of questions which I didn't know their answers so I decided to shup up and told them I'll tell them later

I dressed up belk rang we went to the dining hall and Bonke was sitting with others but not Melissa and Lisa so I went to sit next to Bonke

Me: hey

Bonke: hi

Me: why are you not sitting with Melissa .

Bonke: fake friends you can't believe what they said to me and my unborn baby . They were so mean .

Me: why?

Bonke: when days are dark friends are few.

Me: sorry so what are you gonna do now that you are pregs

Bonke: I don't know. Hey mom still doesn't know

Me: you should let her know thou

Bonke: I am so frikin scared the thing is mom is strict so I can't and I also have to go the clinic I have no one to go with me

Me: listen I can come with you soo don't you worry .

Bonke: really?

I wiped a tear escaping on her left eye .

Me: yeah I will now lets eat

Bonke: thanks

She hugged me so tight.

Shes too emotional shame

At the study I did my duty gave the girls homework. And did some studying Life Science and Maths

~

After I wore my uniform at the morning I recieved a call from a number.

Me: hello

?: hey its Mihle

Me: oh

Mihle: I've been trying to get hold of you .

Me: battery died sorry.

Mihle: oh okay

Me: ...

Mihle: umm...

Me: yah...(it came as a sigh)

Mihle: bye

So weird . Why did he even call

Later on mom called

Me: mom

Mom: you were at the party?

Me: yeah but I can explain

She is going to explode

Mom: I think you are going to drop out of high school and take care of your child . Pretty you are sleeping with boys now.

Me: ma I am a v-

Mom: hey la mntana uSabelo yena . Mmmh Sabelo
Nkwenkwezi kutsho yena ngqo . You know what . I don't have
money to pay for you if you keep on playing these games . I am
still young to be a granny.

By the way You will be quitting school you'll come back this
weekend.

After the call I went to the study . Ha So I will no longer be a
school learner no I must have some funds I can't .

I did maths got stuck. I need Mihle to help me like serious.

~

At break I went straight to his class and my intestins were
burning and I had butterflies probably he'll want us to date .
Like seriously I can't say no .

Mihle: caught me by surprise there. Hi

Me: hey I need help ASAP circles .-I was so damn nervous-

Mihle: mmmh okay give me

He looked at this shape and he was looking at it concentrating .

Mihle: Tan chord

We worked till break was over but we were not finished.

Mihle :lets meet after school okay

Me: sure

Mihle: Pretty look that kiss was a mistake s-

Me: I understand

Lied

I walked out the door with heavy textbooks on my hand and ran to my class. I sit at the back so I went there opened my books and studied . The thoughts of what Mihle said kept fleshing.

"Pretty look the kiss was a mistake" and I said I understand .Well I have to I mean who am I who am I to see myself chilling with guys such as Mihle. Its not like I chill with him. I study or he helps me out . That's all he sees in me . Am kidding myself hes not into me WTF

I almost broke down .

Then a teacher came in

-

I asked to go to the bathroom

I walked in and did my business when I went out Amanda.

Amanda: and here is the bitch of the school. Are you happy now that you kissed my MAN

Me: umm umm sorry Amanda it wasn't my uh -

Amanda: can't talk now ha loser .

She punched me

Me: ah!

I groaned in agony.

She slapped me I held my now burning cheek . Then she continually punch my stomach I felt the urge to throw up . She punched again and I threw up on her face.

Yho what have I done she was still shocked . I quickly rinsed my mouth and ran back to my class acting normal.

I sat at the back next to Melissa

Melissa: what took you so long . Go solve that math problem on the board mmh what's that smell.

I went to solve the Raider problems on the board .

Everyone clapped for me.

~

After Xtra mural time I went to the English club . We practise some more on debating

Me: Its a Draw

Drew: but I had more points than him

Me: its what you say Drew not about points okay .

Now get seatd

I flashed a smile

Me: okay now I see that some of you lack confidence . Right here is how you can improve . Know your facts . Its not a small job .If you read newspapers watch news jus keep your self updated and search the motion guys make you phones useful okay anyone with other views

Me: yes Lizo

-

After the English club house I went back to my class and there was no one left so I packed English books and took ou Physics jus when I was about to write I heard foot steps no one other than Mihle

Oh its Luyanda one of the intelligent students here

Luya: hey

Me: um...hi

Luya: Mihle orderd me to come here to you

Me: oh

Luya: um he has something to attend so need any help

-

I must admit I was disappointed.

-

Me: yeah I do um...here and those they give me head ache

Luya: let me take a sit . So circles you say.

Me: yeah

Luya: ok this right

~

Me: thanks

Luya: no probs I have a book that's very good in this I can lend it to you.

Me: really thanks that would be nice.

Me: I should get going thanks

Luya: pleasure... Please don't leave we'll walk together . Im also going

Me: sure

I packed my stuff and we went out together .

6

I was walking through the corridor the next day morning

When I bumped on someone

?: hey watch where you're going.

Me: oh sorry I wa-

Oh no its Sabelo

Sabelo: its you

Hey You.Did I really you know..

Im not sure whether to lie or what. So I lied

Me: yeah but its nothing no strings attached right.

Sabelo: wow thats the first Ive never heard a girl say that to me...you know its always the other way round .

Me: there is a first time for everything. Cheers

I went to my class and saw Bonke , Lisa and Melissa arguing . I went there and put my physics book which I held on the desk .

Me: what is happening here?

Melissa: stay out of this P.

Lisa: you are nothing but a whore

Oh was that meant for me.

Me:what?

Lisa: I was talking to Bonke not you.

Bonke: oh

Melissa: you know what it's just for the best we go separate paths . I told you I told you Bonke

Bonke: you're lying you were the one telling me to sleep with him and encouraging all the damn time but no-

Lisa: what Melissa did nothing wrong so please girl don't mess with us. You took your choice now man up and be the baby MAMA

They both laughed

Me: guys you can't just say that I mean sh-

Lisa: whose side are you on?

Me: umm uh

Lisa: just as I thought . And you Bonke you better stay away from us

Melissa: come on Pretty give me your Maths book

Lisa:me too

We went to my place at the back I gave them and finished off practicing English till we went to the assembly.

~

At break I decided to stay in doors. I took my phone out and played a game Temple run 2

.

.

I saw Luyanda coming in he spotted me .

Luya: hey

Me: hi

Luya: I came to give you the book I told you about

Me: oh thank you . When should I bring it back

Luya: when you feel like you're fit enough

Me: okay thanks

Luya: cool I have to go

I went back to my game

I went to the toilet I was so damn afraid I mean Amanda will kill me

Luckily she wasn't there so I went back to class and break was over

~

After school I sat alone at my class for like 49 minutes then Amanda came oh oh I am in deep shit and she came with her other two friends

Amanda: and here she is

Girl1: this ugly duck

Girl2: I cannot imagine this kinda girl with a guy like him

Girl1: the school closes in 10 minutes

hurry guys

Amanda: we need to talk

Me: okay what(i was so scared)

Amanda: such a loser why did you kiss Mihle?

Me: um uh

Amanda: bit her up

Girl 1 hit my stomach I crunched

Amands: get up

I stood

Amanda: answer me !!

Me: it was a mistake.

Amanda: I know you have a little crush on him but you have to make that disappear honey coz he is mine and mine alone . Girls kick her for throwing up on my pretty face that in the bathroom.

~

She slapped me and the other girls kicked me repeatedly I smelt blood and noticed my nose was bleeding.

Amanda: Im sure you learnt your lesson and once you tell anyone about this,you will be dead

I was so scared for my life. They went out ouch my body hurts so much. A minute after listening to my pain I sat down hid my face and said a little prayer

?: sorry to disturb I came...Pretty are you okay?

Obviously its Mihle

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Im praying so please don't disturb me

Him: Xolo okay see you later I guess. And the Windows

Me: I'll close them

Him: are you sure you're okay

Me: yes! get out now

Him: okay

After he left I wiped my nose it had blood . Oh my God I cried oh my God what have I done to deserve so much hate . I packed my stuff and closed the windows and the door on my way out

At the hostel I took a shower a long one . After that I went to the study and did languages since I am not good at them that much

At night I was woken by a phone call and its 01:00 in the morning .

Me: why the fuck are you calling me this late Im sleeping here

Mihle: sorry I just wanted to say goodnight

Me: its morning not night...wait you're still awake by this time

Mihle: yeah I was studying nothing bad I killed no one

Then he chuckled I found myself laughing. Ow my jaw hurts its those slaps from Amanda

Me: ouch

Mihle: what?

Me: nothing umm I ...hit myself on the wardrobe. Im fine.

Mihle: okay then Bye

Me: bye

7

After that call I was not asleep anymore so I sat up and lit my torch I studied maths using the book Luyanda gave me . Its really challenging. The bell rang oh my God its 05:00 already . I've been up from 01:00 to 05:00 .

I jumped to the bathroom took the last shower from the 7 shower we have. I went back to the dorm oh its Friday today and I am going home.

My mom called

Mom: uyeza mors ungalibali

Me: I won't mom

I was so annoyed my mom doesn't trust me.

Me: bye

I went to the study ouch my eyes are hurting.

I did Physics . Then went to the dining hall sat next to Bonke

Me: hey

Her: hi Thanks for the other day.

Me: don't mention it .

Her: you are such a good person.

Me: me nah I am a loser and an ugly duckling so don't lie to me

Bonke: Pretty you can't say that I mean you're pretty and have a good heart you are way too far from ugly.

I felt offended

Me: yoh don't have to please me Bonke I mean I am told almost everyday how resentful I am you seriously don't have to make me feel any better so please don't.

Bonke: then why does Mihle look you the way he does I mean you don't even notice .

He looks at you like hes won gold or something like that .

Me:(bored) can we eat ?

We ate then I went to school.

-

Nothing much except the lunch I got from Mihle. I couldnt stop blushing . Like he didn't bring it in person though prefect duties.

I wanted to thank him but eish Amanda .

-

We were given a project which was due Wednesday next week since its friday today.

-

After cleaning my class. School over but I decided to start at the Libri.

When I got there it locked I turned and Luyanda and Mihle were standing there

Mihle: is it closed ?

Me: yeah

Luyanda: see you later Mihle I have somewhere else to go .

Mihle: ah you said..

Luya: nah I'll start at home.

-

I cleared my throat.

Me: have you started on the L.S project ?

I asked while we walked.

Mihle: not yet but I was looking forward to that , the Libri decided to close so..

Me: I wanted to get started so bad but...

Mihle: I have an idea .Lets go to my house theres a study there
s-

Me: no no

Mihle: okay fine

Me: oh second thought yeah lets go but promise me we will be
at the study.

Mihle: yes I promise you're so overprotective of yourself.

I smiled

Me: I am?

He opened a car

Me: wait yoj have a car?

Him: yeah

Me: wow that's great

We arrived at this house its simple but big .

I opened the garage.

~

Its neat black

Advertisement

blue and red are theme colours .

~

After what felt like minutes I excused myself.

Me: can you please show me tje way to the bathroom.

Mihle: on you right from here.

-

I noticed it was dark so I turned.

Me: Mihle its late I have to go.

Mihle: go where?

Me: home

Mihle: there are no taxis

Me: mother will kill me !! I have to go

Mihle: look I am sorry but I think yoj have to spend the night here .

I sat down bitting my nails.

Mihle: Sorry I will be making us dinner .

Me: what about your parents?

Mihle: dad is on a trip .

Me: its only us!!!

Mihle: yes . Get some rest . Look go to the last room .

Me: okay

I went ther sat on the bed Mihle came in I suddenly has goosebumps.

Mihle: let me get you something to wear .

He gave me his boxes and a white big T shirt .

Me: can you please give me space.

Mihle: okay then Princess P

I blushed I wore those and slept on my back on the bed . I felt weight being lifted off Ive overworked myself.

Mihles POV

Jackpot...I never let any girl enter my room if I had a girl over like Amanda I use the guest room . Shes my girlfriend but I dont trust her.

While I made sandwiches there. Amanda burged in

Me: what did I tell you about knocking ?!!

Amanda: is that how you great your bae

Me: yes if you are going to be doing shit in my home then get the fuck out . Now what do you want ?!!

Amanda: You .

Me: not today Amanda!! Can you get out of my sight .

Dad appeared.

Dad: that is no way to talk to our future wife.

Me: your future wife dad , I already know my future wife.

Amanda wena hamba apha goduka uyeva!! Go home hamba khaya . Out!

Her: Mihle you cannot

Me: security!

She disappeared.

Dad: And now 😬?

Me: No Shes toTo fake I jus want a break from all this

Dad: not a break from the Big five right

Me: I told you I won't be doing your dirty business dad no I can't I can't .

Dad: but you're a very good leader there .

Me: no no dad I know I am 18 but still being a gang leader is too muchI want a Normal life

Dad: this is a legecy son. I have cancer and I have only a month to live so like it or not you're their leader.

Me: what no no why didn't you tell me ...dad !!

I furiously took the beggers he ordered and went to my room. As soon as I opened the door I saw a small heap Pretty . She goes along with her name.

Shes so small but I know shes strong . Shes different shes not like the other girls I used to stare at , curved sexy and big boobs . Looking at her wakes me up. I noticed a bruise on her cheek and hence her waist was a little visible I saw that she had marks there. I dont want to wake her up but I am angry at the reason she told me nothing.

I covered her with a flece kissed her forehead and I slept on the couch

8

Prettys POV

I woke up and I lifted my eyes open only to notice I was in the same position but I had a flece covered on my body. Its still dark out there.

I heard soft snores from Mihle. I stared at him sleeping in the couch he's so cute and peaceful and at ease. Well he's always that Serious guy at school . Like he doesn't smile a lot. Sometimes its like he knows hes being watched and its pretty amusing coz he really is being watched I mean this guy has 100+ crushes at school and I am so one of them .

And here am I in my crushs house sleeping on his bed . How ridiculous does that sound.

I know I had to go home but here am I with him .

I feel like I chose a boy over my family. Now I have to go back to the hostel

I gazed at him till I went to sleep again.

I was woken by foot steps

I set on my butt and looked around eish I think I over slept.

I saw that there is a bathroom here so I went there to take a shower rap a towel while I go to the room to take the clothes I wore yesterday with me back to bathroom. Right when I step out the door opens and there's no turning back Mihle was standing right at the door . Frozen I'd say.

Me: um can you please give me some space.

Mihle:oh sorry umm (clears throat) you can use the tooth brush at the left side of the wardrobe. Its sild don't worry. And um you can take some clothes on my closet. I really don't mind. Let me leave you.

-

Okay

I did my business then opened the closet . Wore a black ripped skinny jean and a red polo neck. Oh and a green hat.

~

So Mihle was going to East London today to do some um I don't know his explanation wasn't clear. So he'll drop me at Queenstown where I will be killed by my mom!!! .

~

I took the front passenger seat .

Mihle: smile for the camera

I smiled that was unexpected.

Me: really? That was the ugliest photo eva .

Mihle: no its actually cute trust me.

Me: No I mean its bad I know you don't have to...

Mihle: wilk you stop being negetive about yourself its quite boring.

You are beautiful jus the way you are no need to feel small.

With that I felt satisfied for minute until we saw Amanda knocking at the Drivers window.

Mihle: really I dont have time for this

He starterd the car and turned slashing water on Amanda she was so damn furious I wanted to laugh so bad.

Mihle: let it out

I burst out laughing

Me: sorry but why did you do that.

Mihle: I wanted to experience it first hand. It felt so damn great.

~

After six hour drive we were at Queenstown .Right in front of my house. Well he wanted to see mom

Oh damn my phone. I forgot it at Mihles place.

I asked Mihle to borrow me his phone so I can call mom.

Mom: where the hell are you Pretty!! Ive been sick worried about you.

Me: mom chill Im at the gate

She dropped the call anxd opened the gate .

Mom: and who is this ? Pretty you have the audacity to be Bringing boys in my house girl where did you lose them . You forget how I raised you you go around looking for dicks . Girl you wanna be pregnat if you want that so bad then you should leave my premises just like how they threw you out of that hostel.

Me: hostel

what?

Mom: yes ma baby you won't be returning to your hostel coz you decided to spend your previous night in paradise is it

Me: mom I was doing School wo-

Mihle: she's kinda slept over my house coz s-

Mom: excatly the sleeping around I was talking about. You boy should get going I know how to disipline ma kid .

~

Mom dragged me to the house and told the whole family what happenned . And she added to many spices ey this woman is too much

9

For a moment I felt so guilty about what I have become. I mean even my own mom hates me right now and I have no say .
What I say is worth nothing .

My brother. Kuhle (20) and sister Milisa (14) were disappointed. I don't know if thd word "disappointed" is suitable coz these siblings were jus reminding me of how I mess things up . Like telling me every single thing I've done wrong like always. I'm even worse when it's their turn of being reprimanded.

And now they are on case

Milisa: And when she took my phone without my permission.

Me: that's because you had a boyfriend!!

Milisa: no it wasn't I told you he is my class mate!!

Me: you better shut your little mouth young lady before I expose your little secret.

-well I caught her eating Altra mel-

Mom: Pretty don't you dare that's my you're talking to like that.

Me: and mom I am older than her . She is the one who should be giving me respect!!

Kuhle: really now !! Ha really . Pretty I warned you . And I really did no one can deny that and yet you still want respect. YOU SHOULD FIRST STOP TALKING LIKE THAT TO MY MOTHER.

Father: Will you shup up all of you .I have an announcement to make . I believe that Pretty is old enough so only if she doesn't get pregnant .And she uses protection then its fine . Do what you wanna do my baby coz this is the 21st century . We can not act like we don't know that.

Mom: over my dead body this kid . Is still a kid. Baba we have to talk.

When my rents went to lock themselves in their bedroom . I went to the room I share with my sister and locked myself their . Thinking of the wrong perception they have about me . I ended up building castles in the air . Creating big dreams about my future that are 99.9 % impossible.

Like becoming a doctor specialist in skin . And being the best doctor in the world. And owning my surgery.

And many more...

The following day mom woke me up.

Mom: hey hey makuvukwe kusemini . Yintombi ethen nale ilala kude kube semini(wake up , its midday. What kinda girls sleep till midday)

Do the porridge

Advertisement

we're going to church.

Me: but ma I have to get going Coz I

Mom: you will cook that porridge young lady and we will go to church . Dont make me repeat ma self.

I cooked and dished up

~

3 hours later

I took off my casoc at the vestry. Yes I am an Anglican and a sever there.

When I was folding my suplis. Mom pulled out the door.

Mom: and this is my other daughter

Lihles mom: oh shes so old now hay kids grow hey

Mom: yeah you believe yho this one she cleans, cooks and does everything . When shes home its clear shes a very good kid. She doesny have boys and she is respectful.

Lihles mom: really aw you're so lucky

Mom: very lucky . Pretty we have to go. Oh say bye to Lihles mom nana.

Me: oh Bye

Mom:(whispered) bye ma

Me: bye ma

-

And now my whole family were with me at the hicking spot.

Mom: and oh where's your phone.

Me: my phone ummmm at the hostel forgot it there.

Kuhle was hicking

Milisa next to him when a car pulled by . Well We've been standing here for an hour my feet hurt.

And its Mihle

Mom: oh no not that kid.

Dad: if you are going to have a car hired tell us . We've been standing here for a good hour . My legs aren't that fresh.

Mom: not that kid no no

Dad: Pretty get in that car.

Mom: Pretty don't you dare

Well I got in . Mom roaring out there.

Me: dad pocket money please.

And he gave me 200 .

Me: thanks

Mom: you're busy asking money . You want my husband to be moneyless.

With that the car drove off I did not even say good bye

Mihle: your family is hectic girl.

Me: you have no picture dude.

Mihle: well how are you

Me: headache you have no picture . Yesterday I had this meeting and it was hectic I tell you . Mom was on my throat . As for my siblings. Yho abalothemba abaya bangakutshonisa nasemapoloseni(they are not hope . They can sell you to police)

And I locked myself in my room forgetting that I share it with . Milisa My sister. She threw a tantrum God....and I was expelled at the hostel.

Mihle: thats hush.

Me: I didn't inform them that I was going so I was thrown out. Wait...

I can't believe it I won't be...

Mihle: 😄😄😄😄

Me: what what's so funny

Mihle: I don't know well you're cute when troubled.

Me: will you laugh at me or help me out . I need help urgently dude you can't jus be laughing.

Mihle: 😄 okay okay.

Me: its not funny

Mihle: okay I can start helping you if you tell me about your bruises.

Me: what ?!!

And he was serious

Mihle: your neck waist and what more do I have to mention.

Me: oh those were actually love bites.

Mihle: 😊 say what

Me: sorry not to tell you that I have a boyfriend.

Mihle: oh please spare me the lies.

Me: Im serious . I jus started dating Sabelo so that's it . You don't have to worry.

He looked a bit disappointed.

Mihle: oh I thought you said that Sabelo...

Me: yes I said so and I think we should start thinking where we will start asking for a place to stay.

Mihle: my house

Me: hell no...!!!

Me: no I want a decent place .

We first went to the Mihles home but I did not want to.

Me: Mihle I told you that lets first go to the hostel then I'll come pick my phone after.

Mihle: Well we're already here then so lets jus pick it up and go

Me: ah okay you never listened to me any way I can't say no so have it your way.

Mihle: okay what now?

Me: Nothing

Mihle: Pretty talk I don't wanna force you to something you don't like.

Me: well its that . I don't like you making me do things I don't want to . I told you that I first wanted to go to the hostel to pick up my stuff then we look for a place to stay but no because you are Mihle the Headboy you decide that . No this kid is crazy Ill do what I want to do coz this is my car after all . She owns nothing I have . She's not my wife. And she's somebody's girlfriend so what!! I'LL do what I want . I dont like that

I'd like my opinion to be valued

Mihle: ouch that was quite a speech fine then I am so sorry for treating you like although you exaggerated a bit . Like your mother

I hit his arm playfully

Mihle: ouch Pretty Im still doing ma speech here can you please leave me alone . It's like you have a crush on me

I laughed. Well after I discovered how crazy he can be I've gotten used to him and the crush is jus. GONE

Me: you wish

He gave that cute eye stare . I smirked

Mihle: as I was saying . I am purely sorry I won't do that again.
Forgiven

Me: not yet . I'll forgive you once you and I find a place to stay.
Okay

Mihle: oh

Me: yeah

I kissed his cheek and went out the car to his house since we were there.

Mihle PoV

Pretty is such another person . That kid is ...is I don't know . Impulsive. Acts on instincts and she is assetive. I don't k ow how many times and how long I can go describing her coz she's just something else. Unique. I have never met a simple yet attractive young lady like her. And I'd like to know her better . Something in her makes me want to discover more and more of and I wouldn't want to do things that make her unhappy her smile is the best.

After she pecked my cheek I followed her to the house.

Me: you don't have to knock

Her: this ain't my house

Me: come in then😊

Her: thank you

Mom: hey you why did you take my car !!

Me: mom . Dad said I could take it for the weekend .

Mom: if it has any scrat-

Me: it doesn't and I think its time I also have a car. Im 18 you know

Mom: and you ain't getting it any time soon.

Me: pshh..m

Mom: whose this?(in disgust)

Me: she's my friend from school. Pretty is her name

Mom: phew I thought you were gonna say girlfriend .

Me: what if I said so ?

Mom: that you have no taste I mean look at her. She's ugly has no class . Well she's not in your class

She takes a glass of wine from the dinner table and leaves.

Me: mom you can't say that.

Mom: its true darling!

Me: sorry about that mom can be crazy at times.

10

Prettys POV

-

To be honest I was hurt by her words . Shes just giving me a strong reason to hate myself like really if she says I am ugly . Amanda also says that then that is that. Those are perfectionists and I guess I have to believe them urgh Im such a bore.

Mihle: Im sorry about what mom said s-

Me: she's telling the truth so I don't need you sympathy. Can you please take my phone .

Mihle: you are not going to say that about yourself especially in front of me .

Me: whats the point of saying positive words to myself when I know I am the opposite . I don't want to discuss any of this . Can you please jus go and take my phone

He stared at me . I stared back till I looked away that's when he took his eyes off me then went to take ma phone then when we were about to head back to the car . His mom decided we ain't using the car . So we walked.

Mihle: um um Im sorry about that again

Me: I think you need to start being realistic . Right now you are jus a student who has a grade 11 report. You own nothing from your parents you are jus you and you need to work your way to the top to own cars and all the stuff you want. So don't feel guilty.

Mihle: yeah yeah I get that. And I always tell myself that. And also that one day I'll own my own legal empire. A family business to be precise then Ill be having my 8 cars my mansion. The Mthethwa's Mansion well and you being the mother of my kids and wife of course

I laugh at the gesture he is making . Well I think we laugh coz we both know that we won't ever get married.

Mihle: and the a Lamborghini where me and my wife. Which ie you. will have a good ride .

Me: which ride

Mihle: ew dirty mind there's only one ride

Me:actually I was asking if. The 5 o'clock ride or the 6-

I said laughing he was so embarrassed. We walked to the hostel took my things jus a few.

Me: I think I should be taking the uniform for today.

Mihle: Ill wait for you here.

-

Oh shit Amanda . Arghhhh I packed a few clothes on my spots bag

Lindo: Pretty where are you going?

Zintle: you jus got here whatw up

Me: I am moving out

Hlali: why?

Me: I don't know

Hlali: lair

Zintle: you were kicked out for the slut you are

Everyone laughed and I joined in.

Me: yeah thats actually true yaa Zintle I mean I do open my legs unlike some people I know who act like saints when they are not.

Zintle goes from happy to disappointed.

Zee: are you talking about me look girl I am a virgin those were rumors. I talk si that you believe that I am lose. But girl I am not
Some girls were laughing at her

Me: that's fine then. I believe you. You want to say that right.

Zee: yeah slutty girl

Me: I know I am a slut no need to repeat it.

I genuinely smile coz her look is so not welcoming.

I smirked.

I walked down the corridor only to run over to a crying
Amanda.

I suddenly felt small and tried rush out

Amanda: where do you think you're going . Do you like to see
me like this(she wiped her tears) ?

-

I ran to the gate then I and Mihle head down the road.

Mihle: you seem tense . Whats up

Me: I think I am fine from thus point I don't wanna get in trouble with your girl.

Mihle: don't worry about that. Amanda won't bother you

?: of course I will

Mihle was so annoyed

Mihle: why are you crying? Babe?

Something in me got hurt

Amanda: Mihle you are cheating on me with this bustud slu-

Mihle: don't you use that word . Amanda ! Asked you why are you crying?!!

Amanda: you ...you don't even recognize that she wants you for herself.

Then Mihle kissed her she responded then broke kiss and whispered something on her ear . She smiled they laughed . I was so left out and hurt no I shouldn't no no no I am not jealous.

Mihle: Pretty lets go .

I looked at Amanda who looked at me with disgust .

-

After looking for a cheap affordable flat till it was dark Mihle said tha-

Mihle: I think we should make our way back home coz right.now I don't have cash with me. And you need to pay deposit

Me: I'll ask mom to umm... Send some

He looked at me annoyed

Mihle: its 20:00 besides we only got that place the rest full so I think

Mihle: you shouldn't worry for now coz you have a place.

Me: your house?

Mihle: yeah

Me: your mother hates me like jus the sight of me.

??: hey sapha loo phone wena

I could see a figure not far away

Mihle: you can run .Right

Me: yeah

Mihle : well run for your life

He held my hand and we ran together the bags were quite heavy on us but it was like we held papers. We lost the 'person' when we reached the garage but I continued running.

Mihle: we've lost him

Me: I can feel him behind me

Mihle: Pretty stop

I finally stopped

I caught my breath

Me: whoa!! Im so young to die.

Mihle: 😊 you should do athletics.

Me: no way

I caught my breath

-

At his house the lights were all off .

Mihle: we'll just sneak in

Me: really ?

Mihle: yeah

We sneaked in the kitchen then boom .

lights on

I almost peed on myself

Mihles mom: where do you think you're going . 'Low class lady'

Mihle: mom can you be nice and offer her a place to stay only for tonight.

M.mom: over my dead !!! Out!!

I froze

M.mom: I said out !!

She pushed me out . Mihle stood in front of her having a death stare .

Mihle : if she is leaving . Im also leaving.

M.mom: honey this 'thing' is ...

Mihle:call my woman a thing again then I promise to cut your throat . Today!!! You are not going to follow me or do anything crazy . This is my fathers house soon to be mine. Understood
So much for a mother.

.

He pulled my arm to the stairs.

Him: don't mind her

He had this serious expression.

We were now at his room . He opened the closet. Took out boxers and a white T-shirt then gave me to wear them

Him: you're okay?

Me: yah

Him: you're sure

Me: no . I actually wanna go out .As in like find a place

Can I ? I don't wanna course trouble.

Him: go where? ...come on . We will think about that tomorrow.

Me: Im scared of your mom she will kill me I swear.

Him: don't worry she won't.

He smiled

Me: she hates me!! How can you say that I mean ... She hates me Mihle!!Argh I hate my parents!!

Mihle: don't say that.

Me: its like they don't care...

I thought how they treated me recently . But dad had been awesome!! He loves me too much. I love him too

I felt a hand touching my face.

Wiping the tear I barely recognized then my forehead against his staring into each others eyes. I felt like ...a connection like...like he understand stands me.

We stay like that for a long time

Me: Almost ready please wait for me!!

I was still upstairs combing my hair after breakfast .

I ran with my school bag downstairs

Me:Done

Mihle: that took forever

I chuckled and stopped midway when I got a call from mom.

Me: hi mom

Mom: halow nana(she sounds down)

Me: are you fine ma?

Ma: yes yes ma baby . I wanted to tell you that I got you a place at Mgetha . You know that place moss

//Wow that is a another hostel next to a tarven//

Me: oh okay. Its fine mom

Mom: already paid .

Me: okay ma thanks

Mom: another thing I was gonna tell you is that your...

Me: Mom I just entered school gates can I call you later.

Mom: (disappointed) okAy

Call dropped

11

Assembly

My ex- hostel mates looking at me like I've done something wrong ...like why are they staring at me like that

Mihle held my hand and whispered" you'd swear these people envy us the way they are looking at us"

Me: "let go of my hand you have a girlfriend. Amanda."

Mihle: " and you have a boyfriend"

Me: " boyfriend . Me I don't know what you're talking about"

Mihle: " Last time I checked Sabelo..."

Me: oh Sabelo eish oh yeah him ...yeah

I was so embarrassed . He looked at me in disbelief.

Me: well that yeah ..ummm

Bye

.

.

I went to take a seat at the girls side.

Bonke: girl!!! You are glowing!did Mihle give you some..

Me: no !

Bonke: whats going on between you too?

Me: nothing we are friends

Bonke: friends become...

Me: dont you be Melissa and Lisa on me please.

Bonke: okay ...but you two are why too close . Did you see your entrance there . Amanda is in the girls bathroom as we speak

Me: I hate that girl...

Bonke: u K wakho

Me: mxm uyadika Bonke me and Mihle like we are never going to happen so please

I laughed as assembly began

class started

Break

Melissa: hello girl

Me:hi

Melissa : what's up with you ?

Me: what ?

Lisa came

Lisa: utyela uAmanda ngok. (you're taking Amanda's Boyfriend)

Me: I dont know what you're on about.

Lisa: Stay away from him .

Me: why you guys also want him for yourselves. Forget ker girls
. I don't listen to your guitar anymore.

Its over

They laughed ...

Lisa: haibo girl. You are our friend like it or not . Give me R29 I
know you were home.

Me: No!

Melissa laughed

Lisa: what did you say

Me : I said ...(I was now scare d) leave me alone

They both laughed attracting some attention . Some laughing

Lisa slapped my head.

I wanted to cry so bad

When suddenly there was silence and I heard footsteps

Melissa: friend I missed you

Lisa: Me too ah we love you friend

And then

?: sorry ladies can I steal her for a sec

Lisa smiled like crazy . Oh so she also wants himsame as

Melissa ...so innocently

Melissa: ohh by the way here is my number. -he gave him a piece of paper-

Mihle just looked at it emotionless.

Mihle: hey

Me: hi

I gave him that why did you come here look

Mihle: I wanted to give you your lunch box.

Me: oh thanks you didn't have to.

Mihle: nah its nothing actually. (whispering) I jus missed you

I laughed jeez this guy is crazy .

Me: don't forget the L.S project.

Mihle: working on it.

Me: great then coz same here.

Mihle: see you after school right .

He winked and walked out and I was left laughing . Ay this guy mara

Melissa: mmmmh sounds interesting.

-

-

After school I packed my books as quickly as I can after finishing up my LS project. When Amanda went in

Amanda: happy now ?

Me: huh?

Amanda: are you happy?!!

Me:uhhhh I don't know

Amanda: you know ..bitch you know . You know Mihle chose you over me he jus dumped me !!!

I swear you will pay for this

I was scared at the same time confident if she attacks I'll do that too.

She pinned against the wall...no I can't ..I cant

She kept hitting me with fists

I kicked her stomach with my knee she groaned and fell down .

I took my bag and ran out

When I was at the school gate Mihle called me

I waited .

Mihle: in a rush? Wait what happened to you.

Me: nothing

He looked me straight in the eye I shifted my eyes

Him: look at me

Me: its none of your business Mihle... Look I got a place so Im moving out okay.

I left him standing there and cried silently . He ran after me

Held my hand

Him : Don't worry I'll have it handled

We kept on walking till we reached his place .He went upstairs when Mom called again

Me: mom....I said I WILL CALL YOU

Mom: you're father is in a coma.

My heart broke.

Me: what

Mom: I am still waiting for the doctors . But I promise he will be fine

I dropped the call. Stared at the open space.

My dad is that kind of person who is kind not that much actually coz he doesn't give a lot well that's because people are lazy especially black people. My dad is a garden lover so is mom

.

Abantu abakubona ulima , uvuka ekuseni uhlakula bekuthele nqa. Kunethe bona bezihlelele ezindlin zabo . Bapholile nje then xa sele zivuthiwe iziqhamo kungona bazocelabacela nton haysuka bazphakamise qhithi. Nam ndingabavimba shame but mom yho she gives them then you'll be hearing dad shouting on his own.

" ziyaphela ezkhapheshu

Advertisement

nini niphisa ngazo kodwa ababantu bebengekho xa besityala. Bapheni Baphen ziphele!!"

-Translation-

People see you planting, waking in the morning planting. They are shocked by you .It rains while they are in their homes cosy while you work . Being lazy then when its time for harvest they come and ask your crops. I wouldnt give them either.

Then dad would go on like

"Give them my cabbages . Give them so they run out"

My dad can sometimes be dramatic shame.

On December holidays they plant then I cook and clean the house.

I now my dad is at the edge of leaving or staying in this world

~

I sat on the opposite chair. Thinking hard.... My head was kinda painful

MIHLES POV

I went up stairs while Pretty answerd her phone call .

I took off my uniform wore jean shorts and a white T-shirt then head downstairs to the kitchen where she was.

She looked down and concentrated like she's seen a ghost .
What happened ? I don't think its a question I should ask right now . I jus need to be there for her . I didn't notice I was staring hard till I felt pain in my eyes then a little tear escaped. I brushed it off made my way to her.

Me: Princess P

Her: ...

Me: Pretty

Her: oh sorry I was jus thinking

I sat opposite to her held her hand then looked her in the eyes.

Me: wanna talk about it ?

She fake smiled . A very broken smile.

Me:I'll get you some water

Her: Im fine Mihle

It was more like she was holding tears

I held her hand tightly and embraced her

Her: please don't let me go.

Me: I wouldn't in a million years

I kissed her forehead. Then tightened the embrace. At least she was now at ease

.

After an hour

I think I zoned out then woke when I heard someone shout my name. Oh dad

Dad: who is this young lady here.

She woke up

Me: dad this is my best friend . Pretty.

Dad: the one and only girl your mother was nagging about

Me: not that one .

Pretty : I guess its my cue to go. Bye

Me: Pretty wait..

Dad: she isnt interested son leave her alone okay.

Me: Dad but dadI

..love her .

Dad: its not love son . Its lust

Me: (frustrated) you don't understand .

Dad: Know what do what ever what I know is that this
December you are getting married to Amanda Sondle. Unless
you can be able to grow my business by 20 Million which means
you'll be the president by the end of this year remember its still
the 12th of February you've got 11 months son . Whe..(he
coughed) you fail to do so we accept the deal with the Sondles .
Cl..(he coughed uncontrollably)

Me: dad ..are you ok

Dad: I am fine son . Are we clear?

Me: yes ...are you sure you're fine?

Dad: yes

He went upstairs.

My dad is really dying...what Am I to do with the mother like
the one I have and ...his cancer is really back ... I have to decide.

12

Pretty PoV

I've got the keys for my flat now let us see what we got inside.

I opened then was welcomed by a dusty and untidy place. It had a bed , a fridge, a table and a...only .

Okay

Theres no broom here

So I will need these

A kom

Broom

Pile

And food of course

And cleaning material

.

I locked my flat then head to the shops. I have R1000 in my account so I think it will be enough

Firstly I went to KFC bought twister and a drink for R72

Then ate

Kom(20)

Kettle(150)

Iron(200)

Pile(20)

Groceries over R500

My bank account was R0.00

After this day

The bedding linen dololo

I have to call Mom I need some cash

-call-

Me:mommy dearest,how are you?

Mom: what do you want Pretty?

Me: umm mom can you please send me money coz the one I had ran out.

Mom: hay hay Pretty R1000 iyephi(where is the R1000)

Me: iphelile mama(its finished)

Mom: akho mali kemgoku uzolinda imonth end(theres no money

wait for month end)

Me: Isitovu andisithenganga nje(I did not buy a stove)

Mom: Pretty uyasokolisa wena ngok. Ey cela komeza wethu akho mali ngok ayikhonyan mntana nam. Ihospital bills azidlali

(theres no money really . Ask your neighbors hospital bills are expensive)

Me:(squiky voice) okay ke mama

Mom: I'll send it later

Me: how is dad?

Mom: no change . He is still the same. It was identified he suffered heart attack.

Me: yho

Mom: I have to go the doctor is here.

Me: bye mom

Call already dropped

I packed my stuff

Cleaned the flat

Then went next door to cook

I am so scared

Me: knock knock

?:who is that

Me: its me

-stupid answer-

?:who is me ?

Me: Pretty . I recently moved here

?: come in

I walked in , saw a lady with Spar uniform soaking her feet.

Me: umama ebethe ndizo cela upheka apha. Mna andikasthengi istovu(mom said I must ask to cook here hence I dont have a stove)

Her: when will you greet?

Me: oh sorry

molwen

Her:molo

Me: unjan

Her: ndiyaphila wena?

Me: ndiyaphila nam.

Her: ubusithin ke(what were you saying)

Me: mom asked that I cook here hence I don't have a stove.

Her: oh okay ke baby do your thing. By the way I am sis Lulama

Me:I am Pretty

Lulama: Your name suits you . You are beautiful.

Me: ha

Lulama: ewe I bet you re the most beautiful girl at your school

Me: hai there are some beauties at school .Like Amanda she has it all. The booty . The face everything I wish I had all that so I get any guy phof not any guy . One guy

Lulama: whatt no girl I am so sure you beat them all. You jus have to believe in yourself. I had a child at 16 and I didn't know what to do look at me now.

Me: yeah neh

Her: probably you can use your charm smile to get the hottest boy at school.

I laughed

Her: not sleep with him of course.

Gu gu gu gu gu

I police like knock

Her:who is that?

Silence

Her: did you lock your flat ? Kuyabiwa apha(theft is real here) even midday.

Me: I don't think so

I went to check . The door was ajar but I am sure I left it closed

I heard things falling then my phone rang

Me: Sis Lulama!!!!!!! Sis Lulama!!

Lulama: yinton(what?)

Then everything came still.

I looked at her scared. Then whispered " there is someone in here"

She tip toed carrying a frying pan slightly opened the door . I was standing there till my phone stopped ringing .

She was inside when I heard beatings and crokery breaking or falling . Screams

Lulama: ufuna ntoni , ufuna ntoni, ufuna ntoni(what do you want) . I will kill you you can even ask the veggies that I chop and the ant and cockroach I killed yestarday.

Haibo such threats

Lulama: phuma apha!!(go away)

The person ran out . Li phara phara eliya

Lulama:You're safe now . Lock the door nawe man

Me: thank you sis you were so brave out there

Lulama: tsixa man (lock)

I locked then we went back to her room .

~

Lulama: I am telling you

Me: yho hay you were the boss moss

Lulama: yeah yho oneday I called the school principal acted as the department and told her to go to a meeting while I orded grade 1 students to get in her van . And they did yhi the way she was angry then I made announcements each class that school was over.

I was in stitches

Yho hay ous Lulama mara

Me: I think I should go now ey its late.

Lulama: okay ke baby . Utsixe ne(lock)

Me: okay sis

I ran down the corridor to my room . Music was playing in the taven . Not that loud thou I opened then locked when I turned I saw a figure. A person to be precise

?: relax its me

Me: fuck Mihle you scared me!!! How did ...how ...wait where you the one who was here earlier?

Mihle: when ...wait did someone rob you?

Me: don't play dumb here did you do it?!!

Mihle: No I wo-

Me: THEN WHY ARE YOU FREAKING IN here?!!!!!!

Mihle: okay since you were not answering my calls I asked the spare key jeez don't shout at me!

Me: oh okay what do you want then?

I folded my arms

Mihle: umm ...I came to see you

Me: okay you see me now go .

Mihle: you can't be serious

Me: your girlfriend may be waiting for you so.... go

Mihle: why are you like this

Me:Your family treats me like trash then you expect me to be happy . Juust happy like nothing happened . Forget . I know my worth so I don't think I need you right now coz you coming to my life ...was the worst mistake ...well because of my stupid crush...shit . I hate the Mthethwa's. They make me feel ...low but I know my worth .

Mihle: I was a mistake to come in your life huh?

Me: well ...

Mihle: its fine thou you dont have to like me or love me or anything of some sort.

Me:Its just how I feel ... How your parents make me feel.

Mihle: and Sabelo ? How does he make you feel.

Me: well...um like . I lied . I never dated him .

Mihle: I know

Me:-bewildered face-

Mihle:You thought I would believe you . Pretty I know you . I know your expressions I can read them. Your smile. Your

sweetness. If you're happy when you're sad. The bruise marks you had . You got em from Amanda didn't you

Me: ummmm...no

Mihle : Serious (he gave me that look)

Me: please don't tell her she'll kill me.

Mihle: I have dealt with her. That's why we are no more

Me: ummm I don't know what to say .

Mihle: promise me you will tell me what she does to you , threats all that. I can't live if you're not in my life . So please do tell. Promise?

Me:promise

We looked at each others eyes. Then I pulled out yet again thinking that no I can not do this he can't be here ...

Me: I do have a door so..

Mihle:Pretty I so sorry you feel like that I will try talk to them . I promise everything will be okay.

Me: when? When wilk everything be okay when ? When

Mihle(I was now crying) My father is fighting for his life right now then you tell me..you tell me everything will be okay no no

Mihle: come here.

He hugged me I sat on the bed next to him as he hugged me

Mihle: Everything will be okay my love I promise.

We stayed for hours in that position till I fell asleep.

-

I woke up with a painful arm . I could feel heavy weight on me .

Mihles arm was on my face

Argh I removed it . He put it again I stared at the ceiling then removed it again . Then he put his leg on my stomach and the space on my side was very small its only one inch short for me to fall

Ay this kid the last time I remember I was sleeping on his chest hearing his heart beat . It was fast same as mine . They were beating with the same pace I dont know why .

Me: mihle uyandisinda mfondin vuka(Wake up you're heavy on me)

13

To be honest I was quite surprised to find him still by my side at my toughest times . No one would have done that . Not even my friends . Well they live life of high value sooo a flat like mine would make them vomit . All they talk about is...Always wealthiness. Always

Having someone to be there. Like to Be There is quite new and means a lot to me . I think Mihle deserves all the respect I can give coz what he's done for me so far has been ... Hes just too good for me . He even broken off with his girlfriend.

I don't get that part thou. I mean he seemed to love Amanda and happy.They were that couple everyone wished for...well practically Mihle is the one who is wanted by any girl at school but at school he is jus too scary. In Grade 8 he became prefect of the class people hated him because his rules where so strict . I was always quiet I guess he did not even notice me

Then in grade 10 he received more popularity when he dated the most popular girl at school. Jennifer. She was a coloured we rarely have coloureds here at school .

After that he's been dating several girls after Jennifer.
Obviously he's been fucking them ...I heard

Although he might seem as that kind of person at school but
when I am with him . He is funny kind relaxed .

Any person who would marry him or date him would be lucky
like Amanda . She is too bitchy thou I can't believe she wanted
to make Mihle jealous by sleeping with Sipho...I mean Sipho in
all people . Well he is also Thee guy of the school . A comedian
like guy

Thinking that I can one day be with Mihle like romantically is
quite insane .I even fantasize kissing him and making out Its soo
embarrassing coz I dont stand a chance Like even if I would
mom would kill me . Im too young to die tjo

I don't even think he would be interested in me. Look at me .
Thin . Tall. Small boobs . No ass . Small njee.

Ay this guy is over sleeping now . He should wake up now

Me: wake up Mihle

Him: Im up mmmh

I woke up boiled water for making porridge.

I cooked porridge while leaving it boil I woke Mihle again. Well
ous Lulama gave me a stove ...its in a very bad condition thou

Me: you are going to be late for school . WAKE UP!!

Him: okay mmmh

He stood up still closing his eyes .

Mihle: where is my trouser?

-thats because he slept with his boxers on-

Me: I don't know where did you put them?

Mihle: found it .

I opened the pot stirred again.

Mihle: Oh so How was your first night on your own . In a flat?

Me: Mmmh terrible very actually.

Mihle: why is that so ?

Me: because you kept putting your arm on my face thats the reason I am so sore its like I being beaten tjo hay you cant sleep well .

Mihle: hay it wasn't me. I sleep in one position all night.

Me: tjo really

Mihle: yah (very convinsive look)

Me: yho hayi Mihle next time" if" there will be a next time . I doubt thou. I'll videorise you.

I think it will be best if you don't get married coz ay your wife shame (I said shaking my heard)

Mihle: yho It's just too said I would marry you hence you know how I sleep.

Me: so you admit that you cant sleep well

Mihle: no no no . I dont do all that Pretty may be ngo Tikoloshe

Me: yeah neh

I said laughing .

Mihle: I should get going

Me: after you ate

Mihle: but I don't eat in the morning.

Me: breakfast is the most important meal of the day. You know people who dont eat in the morning die at their twenties? And they go to hell to satan ?

Mihle: really?

I dished up put peanut butter on both dishes

Me: yes My aunt went to hell also I got a call from here oneday

Mihle: ha ha

Me: how many sugar spoons?

Mihle: Three

I put them

Mihle: so you got a call

Me: like her spirit spoke to me .

Mihle: mmmmh

Me: yeah

We were now eating

Mihle:mmmmh

Me: what?

Mihle: this thing is nice what is it again.

Me: porridge

Mihle: you should cook it for me everyday.

-

After 5 hours we were at school . He went to his home after Breakfast then came to my house so we walk together

Amanda saga again at least there were people so she didn't beat me up. I would have kicked her butt too I am tired of her making me her doll. After school

Melissa and Lisa were on my tail.

Melissa: so you're dating Mihle?

Lisa: we heard .

Me: nooo who told you that.

Lisa: everyone sees you. I mean he came to see you during break again!!

Melissa: just tell us man siyamfuna kalok nathi(we also want him) . Pretty if you are really dating him then...

Me: then what?

Lisa: he even spent a night in your shack.

Me: its a flat!!

Lisa: lanto lanto inukayo(that smelly place)

Me: Mxm I am out of here

They look at me in disgust

Lisa: khawumjonge ...ingathi uzowa (look at her like she will fall).

Melissa: ezo walks ziphambeneyo . U Mihle ubona nton na apha kulento .(ugly walks . What does Mihle see in her)

Lisa: Sikhona thina . Hamba sfebe(we are here . Go bitch)

I exited walked alone

On the way I heard someone running behind me

Mxm

I don't care about them now. Melissa is such ...argh they make me mad.

?: Princess P!!

I looked somehow I smiles coz only Mihle calls me that.

I turned

Mihle: yho I thought you wouldn't respond . Its been days I've been calling you

Me: sorry ..lot in my mind

Mihle: Im I included in your thoughts

I blushed. On my no I am not

Mihle: that a yes. I see

Me: no stupid

Mihle:oh Im hurt.

Me: put a plaster on it.

Mihle:😊😊

Mihle: on a serious note.

He then had this serious face .

Mihle: you mean a lot to me.

For a moment I felt special . But its jus ...a "Friend" saying so its nothing big.

Me: I am glad coz you also mean a lot to me. Prince M

Mihle: oh I have a nickname too . Nice. But I hate that name
can you change it

Me: okay ker then Sibhono(I purse my lips)

That's his childhood name . I told me when he was sharing one
of his childhood stories

Mihle: tjo hay hay Pretty

He gave that kinda serious look meaning he hates me right
now.

I laughed my ass out

Me: Sibhono....Sbhonono

Mihle: if I catch you you are dead .

I ran for my life ay this guy is fast but not faster than me.

Perks of being thin.

—

I ran to the Library coz I know its the quietest place so he
wouldn't do anything crazy . I was even sweating.

I took a book and looked at it . Saw Mihle sweating too he searched for me with his eyes . I covered myself with the book then I lowered a bit to see if he sees me that's when our eyes locked and he came to sit opposite to me . With a book also

I concentrated on my book . He cleared his throat I didn't dare stare one bit.

I stole a stare caught him glancing at me. I smiled then cleared my throat looked at the book again

I stole a glance again he was still staring at the book then he lifted his eyes. I looked at the book .

Mihle: Princess P

I laughed

Mihle: look at me

I stood up .

Me: I am leaving .

Mihle: why? You know you owe me . You can't call be that name again

Me: Hayka Sbhono

Mihle: don't you dare

I statered running inside coz I could see he was about to chase me .

Librarian: hey hey no noise .

I ran out

Iwas now laughing coz he was so tied when I reached my flat.

Mihle: I will (catched his breath) get you for this I promise you

Me: what are you waiting for .

Mihle:(catched his breath) soon .

Me: whoa!! I need to freshen up like serious.

Mihle: I should be going home .

Me: okay

Mihle: don't worry I'll be back .

Me: really

Mihle: no

I looked at him angrily

Mihle: Look Pretty I would like to see you again but I have some stuff to take of. Okay

Me: but you first said you will come .

Mihle: I was only joking .

Me: you don't joke like that !

I got in my flat

Mihle: Princess P

Me: go away.

I don't even know why I am so angry.

It was then silent

-

And now I have nothing to eat . I must cook something the study.

Psshhhh . I hate hate my life

Mihle came with all my clothes and other stuff I left at his house and hostel. So I have some extra bedroom and bed linen.

I cooked pap and pilchard then ate. After eating I washed dishes then took my books for studying just then Music in the tarven started playing. Know what I will concentrate even though they make noise.

I tried reading again.

Ay its too much its like these people are fighting.

I took out my math book and did math. Much better but I have a test next week I should study now. Argh I hate this place.

I also need a carpet. This place is just like some abandoned place. You should have seen Mihles face when we were talking about this place. But I guess he tried to hide the fact that. ITS IS VERY DILAPIDATED.

Any way. I slept at 01:00 minutes later I got a phone call no I am dreaming.

It rang again

I answered without looking the caller

Me: Talk

Mihle: still mad at me?

Me: oh its you . No I was never mad at you .

Mihle: you don't havr to lie

Me: fine I was mad then. But not any more coz you called.

Mihle: oh (kinda slow and sexy)

Me: dont flatter yourself please

Mihle: No honestly I am ...flattered

Me: mxm Good night Mihle.

Mihle: I called remember .

Me: What were you actually going to say . THEN

Mihle: I was going to say . Good night .

Me: thank you . Good night to you too.

I heard back ground voices

I could hear that he was in a car.

Mihle: I have to go bye.

Me: bye

Do you have to drop this call .

He already did.

In the morning .

It valetines day

I received a call from Mihle .

Me:hey you

Mihle: hey. I have to tell you something can we meet?

No let me jus tell you coz its nothing big. I have a new girlfriend

Me: oh

14

Mihle: she's amazing. Would like you to meet her.

Me: oh no I don't want to.

Mihle: why? She also wants to meet you. May be w-

Me: I have to go.

.

I dropped the call

Somehow my heart broke to thousand pieces . Why did he even tell me that why. Argh I even hate that girlfriend of his

I prepared for school then walked to school . To think of . I even dished his plate of porridge argh I hate him also.

.

Why am I so angry .

Never mind I just hate him ke that's it.

~

During break I went to the school ground its quite there soo I sat there alone.

Thinking about my life.

Someone just closed my eyes

?: guess who is this.

Me: um Someleze

?:no

Me:um Mihle yes you are Mihle

?:try again .

Me: you're Mihle

He removed his hands only to see Luyanda.

Me: oh its you

I was embarrassed for a second there.

Luya: yeah Its me .

He beamed.

Me: oh your book um

Luya: nah lets talk about that later on . I wanted to tell you something.

Me: okay

Luya: look I ...love you. Since I spent a little time with you . I've grown to love you.

Me: oh right

Lil surprised

Me : okay

Luya: so what do you say .

Me: um um I have to think about it actually.

-Think about what-

-If Mihle can have another girlfriend then why not me. Its not like Luyanda is my first boyfriend. I once had one in Grade 9. Sooo nothing new here-

Me: well there is nothing to think about actually. Lets do this

Luya: you have no idea how happy I am

Me: yey!!

He tried to kissed me instead I went for a hug .

Me: lets take it slow shall we?

Luya: okay

.

After school Luya offered me to go to KFC then the park

We went just like that

I couldn't say no to free food.

We went to the park . He busy telling me how much he loves me . I was actually bored he then lifted my chin up then pecked my lips

When I looked in front of me .Mihle how did he get here?

I pursed my lips

Mihle:what a day

He smirked looked at Luya then at me . In a way I was scared

He walked straight to Luyanda and hit his face . Then his stomach repeatedly

Mihle: you dont go messing with me . How dare you How dare you

Me: hey hey!!! Stop Mihle stop

I tried removing him

Mihle: Leave me the fuck off Pretty!!

I could sense that he was angry .

Me: no no you can't go around beating people . Stop Mihle

He continued beating him on his face . He now had blood

Me: please don't kill him 😞(I was now crying even praying that he doesn't kill him.)

Mihle stood up

Mihle: that will teach him not to mess with me and my belongings again. (he said in this angry tone then looked at me . I have never seen him this angry) You follow me .

I was so scared . What will he do to me .

I walked to the car I followed to be honest I don't want to follow. He got in . I stood there then he open the window

Mihle: will you get in or what?

I pray God he doesn't kill me .

I got in .

Me: I a-

Mihle: can you shut up .

I could sense he was still pissed.

Me: he's not dead is he?

Mihle: No hes not . Shut up now

Andimince

He drove out of town

Me: where are going

Mihle:...

Me: you're not going to kill me are you.

We reached the top of the hill . Theres a big tree with benches .

No I am not about to die am I.

Me: if you're going to kill me jus say it

He went out the came to my side .

Mihle: welcome to my world . Get out of the car I need to show you something

15

I wonder what is that .

I was so scared I am sure it was even visible .

Me: are you going to kill me ?

Mihle: No (he chuckled) why would I?

I let out a breath I didn't even know I was holding.

Mihle: (smiled) follow me

Me: o-kay

It was kinda late around 7 now and it was kinda dark . I could see the orange like sky

We walked to the bench across I see the whole town its its beautiful. The lights were switched on house by house since it was dark then

Me: its ...its beautiful . Why did you bring me here?

Mihle:This place is special to me . Listen-he was then quiet-

Me: what?

Mihle: hear that?

Me: no . Its silent I hear nothing

Mihle: exactly . Its peaceful ...peace ful no one to disturb you
jus complete peace.

I stared at the town lights .

This place is really peaceful

Aftdr some minutes

Me: can i ask you a question.

He looked at me .

Mihle: ask

Me: why did you beat Luyanda like that ? Where did you learn
all that karate I saw

He laughed a little

Mihle: its not funny I know.

But(he then became serious)then I'll tell you this.

I grew up in Johannesburg

I used to live with my dad and my mom . And ah father used to
beat me and mother up .

Everyday single day Its like he hated us . The anger in his eyes said it . At that time he recently started a business and was a gangleader . When he had a meeting or one of his collages came . I hid he didn't want people to see the disgrace son. I was always that weak son to him every little wrong thing I made I'd get a beating.

Then one day Mom made him very angry she cheated then he bit her I tried protecting her . He bit me too and left me scars on my back. I went to my room crying then the following morning mom was in real pain. After days I was told she was dead.

I was devastated coz mom was always there for me . She protected me . Told me she loved me everyday . I felt safe with her but she left me. I was 7 then .

I grew this hate toward dad It grew day by day . I stared practicing moves . Went to the gym on my free time once I had one I wanted to be physicallay fit so I came also revenge on him but...I was afraid . He still scares me even today.

He remarried to my moms sister when I was 13 . She's always been flashy and all I don't hate her that much thou but she sometimes gets to my last nerve.

All these years after mom's death Dad still continued beating me up. It never stopped but when I moved here after his

marriage. It all stopped but started again till I threatened to call the police and tell them everything since I also had a video . At 14I was called by a woman. We arranged a meeting then thats when I saw that my mother was alive. I hated her coz she abandoned me . I've never seen her since then.

Age 16 he introduced me to the gangster life . The reason we are here is because he doesn't want to be recognized easily.

So here am I before you. A gangster

-

This is quite a lot to take in .

Me: All I can say is you're strong. You had to through that alone and here you are still alive breathing. Loving , kind and fun to be with.

You're not weak and I don't think you never were being told how awful you are everyday kills but you had that hope. And its still there. The hope that someday everything will be okay

Advertisement

remember what you said in my worst.

-

I hugged him then he sighed heavily . Peacefully

-

Mihle : are you cold ?

Me: no being in your arms makes me warm . Wait did I say that loud .

He simply chuckled kissed my forehead then he gave me his jacket

Mihle: better ?

Me: better

I saw a tatto on his arm connecting jus a small . Its more like fire

Me: youve a tatto .

He smirked

Me: can I see it ?

Mihle: you want to see me naked ?

Me:😊no only the top.

Mihle:I don't usually show my body to anyone

Me: its..its fine .

Mihle: but I'll show you

I waited for it. He slowly slowly took his vest off .On his spinal cord he had three circles A heart followed by a picture of his father and mother . The third money.

Mihle: Those are my priorities . First ,love. The unconditional love that I have for you. Second family . Thirdly money.

I touched them slowly scanning them . Then there were flames on the sides

Me: did it hurt?

Mihle: a little.

Me: and the flames ?

Mihle: they represent the strong passion I have for them . It like fire its burning inside me . Thats why the fire starts getting small as the circles go down my spine. See the heart its burning . Thats what I feel for you Pretty. I don't know how to control it anymore I tried getting over you but I can't.

Me: umm me ? No way

Mihle: I don't wanna force you to something you don't want. But I would love if you would be my girlfriend.

I didn't realise I had an O shape in my mouth. Till a fly got in

Me: mtu mtu seis

Mihle gone from serious to this hilarious face. He was busy laughing at me

Me: argh mtu

I stood up tried cleaning my tongue.

Me: What are you laughing at.

Mihle: you should have seen your face .

He was even crying.

Me: I will fuckin kiss you if you don't close that mouth.

Mihle: try me(still laughing)

I attacked him with a kiss . He responded . I went with the flow it grow in to a passionate kiss. I was touching his bare back moving my hand up and down while he kept making circles on my back. He lowered his hand down to my butt I removed it. Things were heating up and so I broke the kiss

Me: I love you Mihle Mthethwa

Mihle: I love you too Pretty Mthethwa

Forehead against forehead sharing the same breath . We stayed like that for a long time staring in to each others eyes.

16

We decided to spend the night at his house since it was near and it was very late . Around 2 am now. I know it late we lost track of time .

I was carrying a khokhi pen to mark.

Me : you will be sleeping on this side then this will be my side.

Mihle: and the khoki ?

Me : I am going to mark my place and yours

Mihle: thats not necessary I mean it's not like I will go on your side.

Me: I am not risking that

Mihle: no no no you won't be doing that .

I started drawing

Advertisement

he jumped on the bed

Mihle: Princess P I don't see the need for that

Me: no Prince M this . Will give me a piece of mind

Mihle: come on (he crawled then started tickling me)

Me: stop (laughing) stop Mihle . (laughing) Sibhono I said stop

Mihle: I won't stop for that.

He managed to take the khoki from me while I ran out of the room he was literally after me .

I ran for my life . Went down the passage then I got in a room closed the door. Then sighed he pushed the door . I made sure he doesn't open by putting a table there

Mihle:(singing -Snowman by frozen) Elsa I know you re in there . People were asking where you been

Me: are you crying?

Mihle: are scolding my singing

Me: no no was there an angel singing there singing

I laughed

Mihle: One day youll see me in idols then you'll stop laughing.

Me: oh you mean the wooden mic

Mihle: that exactly its the category with best singers mos ?

Me: yeah(I laughed silently at his lack of knowledge)

He continued to hum once he was quiet I opened the door . He was no where to be found ouch my eyes hurt so bad

Mmmh whats that smell

I went closer to it.

I found Mihle in the kitchen making an egg

Me: what are you doing there

Mihle: cooking . I'm hungry want some

I faked a smile

Me: sure

He dished up yho I swear I'll be eating coals today .

Mihle:its a little burnt sorry

I nodded . I took a bite looked at me with anticipation . I smiled

I wish I could threw up thiss is too bad for my liking

He took a bite himself. I could see the see he himself wanted to throw up. He rushed to the bathroom . I followed

-

Mihle: Gross!!

I laughed

Me: exactly

Mihle: why didn't you tell me . Argh its like I was eating coals
argh mtu.

Me: I didn't want to disappoint .

Mihle: you should tell me okay. Next time

me: thell be a next time?

Mihle: probably.

-

-

My arlam rang at 05:09 I hardly slept oh today I was going to a
debate at Geoge . Its friday .

I woke up and wrote a note telling him why I left. I kissed his
forehead and left him snoring like a baby . He is so cute and
innocent

I can't believe we spent the whole night at that hill.

-

-

Saturday at day time we were back . Its been great. We became second position!!!

-

-

At night I called Mihle telling him I am back.

Me: : hey Prince M

Mihle: hi(less excited)

Me: I am back from George

Him: oh ...how was ... Your stay there?

Me: great you can't believe what I saw . There were p.....

Him: oh I am happy that you were happy.

Me: ncohh and th-

Him: I have to go .

Call dropped

What did I do wrong ???

After that sis Lulama asked me to accompany her to town so I wore a skirt, a Black tee .

Off I went with her.

When we came back I was so freakin tired tjo....I tried to call Mihle again went straight to voicemail . Whats up with him I called again It rang but unanswered. Argh is this dude ignoring my calls

Me: Argh pick up the damn phone

Lulama: haibo what did that person do to deserve an angry lady like you

Me: he's not answering the damn phone

Mom called

Me: hey mom

Mom: hallo honey

Me:how are you

Mom: I am fine. You?

Me: same here how is dad

Mom: he is fine he is out of ICU today we are heading back home actually.

Me: really?!!

Mom: Yes. I hope he will be better

Me: he will mom .

Mom: look I have to go Love you

Me: bye mom.

I beamed.

Lulama: soooo what got you smiling .

Me: My dad is recovering!!!

I hugged her tight thats what I need at this moment.

Me: I can't get hold of Mihle thou I need to tell him this . Oh my God hes been so supportive Im sure he'll be happy to hear this . Let me try him again

I called this time someone else answered

Sounded like his mom(Aunt..is mom whetsu)

M.mom: hey hey how dare you call my kid when he needs to be alone with his family.

Me: how ...why do you have his phone on you?

Where is he.

M.mom: hes at the hospital! His father is dying here . Hay nxa

"Prudence is that my phone? What did I tell you about answering my calls. Jeez privacy is sometimes needed give me that" That was Mihle

"No" said a sharp voice assuming its his mom

Call dropped.

I need to get to the Privats hospital ASAP. I asked Bhut Lumphumzo since he has a car and he was going to be working night shift anyway.

-

-

I got there in the waiting room . Found M.mom and Mihle worried AF Mihle still on yesterday's clothes.

Me: Prince M

He looked my direction . I ran to him and hugged him . He embraced me firmly like something he's been craving for

Me: what happened?are you okay?

Dr: Mr Mthethwa

Mihle: Dad is ina crucial situation so um(in a hoarse voice) its cancer. Can you come with me .

I held his hand he tighted the grip when we were about to enter

Tiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii

I could read Mr Mthethwa lips sending a message to his son .

"I love you"

The doctors told us to move back. M.mom crying like crazy

M.mom: if you(pointing me) haven't arrived he wouldn't have died. Your presence killed him .

Mihle: mom ! I don't need this right now so please!!

He walked out i followed

He was emotionless like it was like he was holding tears or something.

Me: its okay

I said that repeatedly brushing his back. He wasn't even crying or talking jus quiet God what do I do now .

-

I spent the night with him all night long.

His mom forcefully took me home(flat) around 4 when We came back from the hospital.

That day I cried myself to sleep . I don't know why I am crying thou

17

Me: look I get that you're upset . But I want to be there for you okay. Mihle look at me in the eye.

He slowly turned his head .

Me: I love you please let me be there for you.

He shakes his head then got in the car drove off. I was standing stunned he did not do that to me did he? What's up with him I went to the house and sat down in one of the chairs.

Sighed heavily

.

.

?:what are you doing here

I looked up only to see his mom .

Me: umum I am waiting for Mihle ma He said he'll be back

M.mom: oh okay so you thought it would be fine to wait here?

Me:um since he'll be back . Yeah

M.mom: can you jus give up on him already . The guy you are obsessed with is getting married this year and not to you for that matter so buzz off .

Me:I don't care . I'll wait for him to tell me that coz I don't believe you. Mihle wouldn't do that to me. He wouldn't lead me on knowing that he is getting married . You know you're so unbelievable. What on earth have I done to deserve a treatment like that .

M.mom: You are simply not welcome here .

Me: sorry if I am disrespectful but I will wait for him

.

.

Two hours later I heard a car engine . As soon as he opened the door our eyes locked

Mihles POV

Argh what is she doing here . Did she really wait for me oh my God this girl is unbelievable . She cares . That's a problem I can't afford to have people caring for me then the next moment they are gone just like my mommy real. She really broke my heart into a thousand pieces to the extent that I can't I can not do this anymore I am scared that at some point she will leave too and that better be now

If I break up with her now it will be much better than having heart being deceived again but how do I let her go when I keep growing love for her day by day .

I think gradually I'll learn to unlove her . My number one priority is love but at this point I am afraid to love whole heartedly I can't risk that.

I lock the car door after my little journey to visit my dad's tomb . I hate that man I am in this situation because of him . He was always this genouras man infront of people when he was inhuman just imagine he's actually forcing me to join his dealings any option that I chose will lead me to his dealings . For now I am the current leader of the gang and I hate that. I hate that he makes decisions for me even though he's dead .

My eyes locked with Pretty's brownish beautiful eyes her lips . What is this girl doing to me . She's she's beautiful perfect . Too perfect to be with me

Luyanda can have his chance Argh what I'm I saying of course not Just imagine

She rushes to me and hugs me . I stay rigid . I feel so catastrophic I need air some space.

Pretty: I know this is hard for you but Mihles you are greater than this I believe in you.

Why is she so nice and caring . This is a bit overwhelming for me

No I can't do this

Me: Pretty I need to tell you something

Pretty : yeah Anything

Me: I can't be with you .

Pretty:(laughing) stop teasing

I just keep a straight face

Pretty: no way Why You don't like me anymore what?

Me: it's me actually . You are not the girl for me okay .

Solid silence

Me: not like that I mean You're beautiful smart but I don't think we're good together.

I can't read her expression

Me: we can be friends thou

My cheek suddenly burnt ouch this girl really slaps ouch . She walks out

I can't even run after her

Mom: Mihles get ready Amanda's family is coming for dinner !!

Me: oh you didn't tell me

Mom: I'm telling you now get ready

Right then I hear a door open

Amanda and her stack of make up face

Amanda: Hey honey

She perks my lips

Amanda: I saw that girlfriend of yours poor thing was crying . I guess you made her cry coz that's your hobby right .

.

We eat dinner and it is announced that Amanda will spend the night here.

We were watching TV well I was not coz I was drowsy so I went to sleep . I heard something moving undercovers

I almost freaked only to find Amanda

Me: what are you doing here?

Amanda: you're my fiance what's wrong with that .

She starts kissing and to be honest At that moment I was in pain and I kind of needed something to make me feel better so We ended up

Waking up naked after making love

Pretty's Pov

I don't believe this all I need now is some sleep and wake up . I don't even know what I'm saying

'you're not the girl for me' oh my goodness I knew that I am ugly but still went for him . I should have known. He didn't even run after me oh how could he when he was always lovely Dovey with Amanda . I hate her guts mmmh that girl . I received a call

Me: hello

Mom: hi my baby

Me:

Mom: I wanted to tell you something baby.

Me: what ?

Mom: your dad isis getting worse He collapsed two days ago . He's in comma .

Me: Ohhh

Mom: I found out when I was at the doctor for check u- I mean
...it doesn't matter

Me: you went to the doctor

Mom: what no baby I'm fine

I'm doing just fine

Me: oh I wish daddy could become fine soon .

Mom: he will . I have to go bye love you

Mom never says that what's up

18

To think that I was one day gonna marry Mihle . I should really think again . I don't think I'll ever love someone the way I loved him, giving him my all ,my heart and my soul but he choose to do this to me . Fine .

Sitting in my room thinking deep till my mind doze to dad . What if he dies , he's getting worse and worse each day . God if ever you think of taking me please let it be something quick coz I can't bare to see people worried about me . I stood up making my bed after having those deep thoughts.Taking the sock that was stuck at the bottom of the sheets while I was making the bed I find myself thinking about the times I had with Mihle .

""Mihle: Princess P

I laughed

Mihle: look at me

I stood up .

Me: I am leaving .

Mihle: why? You know you owe me . You can't call be that name again

Me: Hayka Sbhono

Mihle: don't you dare

I statered running inside coz I could see he was about to chase me .

Librarian: hey hey no noise .

I ran out

Iwas now laughing coz he was so tied when I reached my flat.

Mihle: I will (catched his breath) get you for this I promise you

Me: what are you waiting for .

Mihle:(catched his breath) soon .

Me: whoa!! I need to freshen up like serious.

Mihle: I should be going home .

Me: okay

Mihle: don't worry I'll be back .

Me: really

Mihle: no""

How happy we were with no worries

""Mihle : are you cold ?

Me: no being in your arms makes me warm . Wait did I say that loud .

He simply chuckled kissed my forehead then he gave me his jacket

Mihle: better ?

Me: better

I saw a tatto on his arm connecting jus a small peak . Its more like fire

Me: you've got a tatto .

He smirked

Me: can I see it ?

Mihle: you want to see me naked ?

Me: no only the top.

Mihle: I don't usually show my body to anyone

Me: its..its fine .

Mihle: but I'll show you

I waited for it. He slowly slowly took his vest off .On his spinal cord he had three circles A heart followed by a picture of his father and mother . The third money.

Mihle: Those are my priorities . First ,love. The unconditional love that I have for you. Second family . Thirdly money. ""

Ohhh I should stop thinking of him . Know what from now on I hate Mihle .I was disturbed by a knock

Me: yerrr who is that?

?: Open up I know you're in there

Me: nx

I walked to the furiously snapping the door open .

Me: what do you want .

Mihle: I came to talk

Me: with who ?

Mihle: with you come on babe

Me: don't baby me

I snapped with a tear falling he wiped the tear

Me: leave me alone . You know I have a boyfriend

Mihle : no you don't

Me: I do , Luyanda is my boyfriend

Mihle: let me in

Me: no!!

Mihle : let me in

Me: I don't want too .

I looked at him in the eyes . He was fuming I never saw him like this. Suddenly he pushed me me hashly I hit my back against the wall and fell . Ouch

I looked at him . His face now remorseful

Mihle : sorry I didn't mean to .

He picked me bridal style and stared at my eyes

Mihle: I'm sorry

Then he leaned in

Advertisement

kissing me passionately

For the longest time.

Mihle: I love you Pretty

—

Mihle , a sweet boy who used to laugh and smile is now more a monster . When did he became this angry I mean he's been sad

for a long time I don't remember when he smiled. Probably his father's death really affected him .

Me: I'm okay Mihle you can go now

Mihle: you're kicking me out?

Me: no I mean you need to eventually go home

Mihle : this is also my home

Me: (I smiled) I mean your home

Mihle: oh

Me: I am not throwing you out but I think it's best you leave .

Mihle: can't you see I want to be with you?

I started breathing heavily thinking how absurd what I was hearing

Mihle: I want to stay with you for tonight please

I purse my lips . To think of , this guy in front of me has just pushed me against the door and yet here I am melting on his words . I mean he does love me, right.

Me: promise me you'll never be aggressive as you were okay

Mihle: (with a smile) promise, come here

I hugged him and he kissed my hair . Wierd.

Then went to my forehead , nose repeatedly till I was giggling then my mouth . Soft more like it was our first kiss . So sloppy and passionate. His hands traveling down to my hips then rubbing my butt slowly damnnn that feels so good . He broke off the kiss then took me up to his waist lying me on the bed then started kissing my neck . He made soft kisses staying on the same spot for seconds before moving to the next then he went down to lying wet kisses on my chest slowly opening the buttons of shirt continuing with the kissing till my shirt was off and ...I I didn't wear any bra today . Ummm that feels good . That was him massaging my boobs his hand traveled down to my stomach then down again to my *email address* Ahh did he just damnnn umm

Me: babe

Silent

He he lowers his head to my *email address* damnnn probably I'm ready for this but just imagine .

Me: Mihle stop

He didn't listen

Me: Mihle!

He looked up

Eyes red

Mihle: please trust me on this

Me: babe I don't think I'm ready

Mihle : but babe okay

As he was talking he started rubbing me . He gotta be kidding me

Mihle: I love you

Me: but Mihle ..mmm

I opened my eyes . Wait what I'm naked ohh the event of yesterday started playing on my mind .Damn I wasn't planning to lose my virginity like that God . Tears started steaming on my eyes yerrr . And when I look by my side there's no one . Did he ...did he just leave me

I heard the door open

Mihle: look who is awake

I rolled my eyes

Mihle: we are not going to school today

Me: what!!

Mihle: we're already late

Me: no we're not !!

Mihle: it's 09:50 babe

Me: oh God can you just get out .

Mihle: what! Why ?

Me: just go!!!

Mihle : babe

Me: oh Someone is testing my patience

Mihle: I made an egg so we can eat . You have no idea how I sweated for that then you want me to go

I took the sheet and held it around my body .

I walked to the door and opened it

Me: go

He walked to the door and closed it .

Mihle: I won't

What's that smell .. dude has he been drinking and on his nose what's that white stuff .

Me: you're drunk Mihle . I've never I mean never heard or seen you drunk

Mihle: it was just a few drinks dude whooa

Me: don't whooa me you drinking. Drugs don't mix up

Mihle: guess what now they do .

He walked up to me then tried to kiss me . I pushed him

He stared at me for a second then I felt a hot slap I looked at him

Him: don't you dare say that to me again

Me: excuse me !! What did you just say ...Get out

Him: okay then babe I'm sorry

Me: mihle you hit me

Him: but made me do it

Me: but you hit me

Him: Pretty you ain't gonna blame me . First you become moddy here wanting me to leave then I try to kiss you then you push me . You drove me to hitting you . It's your fault

I mean he makes sense I made him mad for no reason. I feel bad for that

Me: sorry babe I didn't think that it would affect you .

Mihle: about time you realise

Me: I'm sorry

I kissed his cheek

Me: so you were saying

As I glanced at the wardrobe mirror I noticed a big red mark on my face. I deserve it

19

"For the third time, Hi"

I was woken up from dream land . Was I asleep?

I looked at Luya speaking in front of me .

Luya: do you hear me?

Me: umm what?

As he took a seat he asked " what's up?"

Me: nothing

I pulled my Pollo neck for the second time since I've set my foot here at KFC . So me and Mihle decided it was time for us to just chill out . Like do something different other than staying in . But for now he went to the bathroom and seconds later ..wait I don't know when Luya appeared in front of my face coz I busy thinking how messed up I am . I guess . I mean I can't even wear a normal dress because what . I'm afraid that bruises will suddenly pop up and people will be asking . Attention is what I hate so I wouldn't dare.

Luya:I'm talking to you

Me: oh its fine

Luya: fine what?

Me: sorry what did you say again?

Luya: are you okay?

-

He looked at me concerned .

Me: yeah (faked a smile) more than fine .

Luya: it's just that you seemed absent. Like your body is here but your mind ain't .

-

I chuckled like a real one coz he said that in a funny tone . Like a real laugh .

Me: stop it

Luya: what did I do ?

He asked chuckling

Luya: I was just telling the truth you see .

Me: that felt good thou

Luya: what ?

Me: laughing

-

"And look who decided to join us " I turned to see a smirk on Mihles face

-

Luya: Hi

He coldly greeted

Mihle put his four fingers on my shoulder before greeting back.

Mihle: Hello Luyanda .

-

"345!!!!!!....345!!!!!"

-

Luya : that's my order . See you

I looked at him as he walked to the counter and Mihle on the other hand taking his spot.

Mihle: so you were busy flirting here huh?

Me: No I wasn't

Mihle: Yes you were

Me: no how can you think that

Mihle : Yes you were . Deny that one more time Pretty then I'll

Me: Do it then . Mihle Mthethwa I am done with you .

Mihle: you're joking right

Me: no I'm not joking . I have no time to joke

Mihle: okay so what's it gonna be

-

I can't believe I'm about to say this

Me: Yesterday at school . I wasn't me because what . I was beaten which is something rare even at home then I see myself being beaten by someone im not even sure I know .

Mihle: I thought I apologised for that day babe the thing is you made me mad by wearing that short dress. I thought we talked about this

Me: and that was the third time you hurt me. First you push me against the wall. You slap me and you beat up my beautiful body .

Mihle: not so loud people will stare

Me: I'm done with you

-

-

I love KFC wings so much but for today I forfeit it because I can't stand to be with him . I walked to my flats crying . What have I done to deserve this . Everything seems to be falling apart. I walked down the corridor to my flat . Taking the key from my jacket to open up

-

"Pretty " I looked to where I was hearing the voice. Sis Lulama

"Um Molo Sisi " I tried wiping away my tears .

Sis Lulama: yiza apha mntanam (come here my child)

I went to her and she buried me into a tight embrace .

Sis Lulama: kuzoba right Va (it's gonna be alright)

-

She opened her door and let me in . Rushing to pour me some water for me to drink . Did she just drink that water

Sis: atsho kamnandi lamanzi

She looked at me and had a concerned face.

Sis: ndikugalele amanzi? (Want some water ?)

I nodded. She poured some and gave me to drink before sitting in front of me .

Sis Lulama: kuvele kwathini nah maJola? Mmh (what happened maJola)

I gulped the water I had on my mouth.

Me: utata uyagula ngoku ...(dad is sick and now...)

I just broke down thinking about dad actually . How he cared how close we were but I mostly cried for the situation I am in . I never thought I could be a victim of abuse . We are being taught how to handle that at school . What to do but it's actually harder than sad . I cried for everything and I cried till I had hiccups .

Sis Lulama: Xolo Nana nyamezela bubomi(sorry girl . Be strong it's life)

Sis: mandigalele awanye amanzi . (Let me pour more water.)

After an hour I think I went back to my flat and decided to call mom .

Mom: ewe Nomashiya

No she did not call me by that name . When last did I hear some call me by a name I got coz I liked drawing my eyebrows .
Absurd .

Me: mom

Mom: I just thought you missed your real name

Me: no mom please don't call me that again .

Mom:okay ke mntanam (okay my baby) to what pleasure do I owe ...ithin na lanto(what does that thing say) you or to what pleasure does I ..you . Hay wetsu how is my baby doing.

I was in stitches . Mom can be such a comedian .

Me: I'm good mom

I bet that's what teenagers in Varsities

Advertisement

collages say when the course is chowing and boarding school when they're in trouble or not feeling good but not wanting to trouble family. On top of problems they have .

Me: how is dad

A huge sigh came out .

Mom: Same baby . But we have to stay in hope he's gonna be alright

Me: okay mom

Mom: don't forget to pray okay

Me: I won't

Mom: okay mntanam I have things to do yonke into ijonge mna ngok (everything is looking at me I can't translate guys)

Me: Goodnight mom

Mom: mommy loves you .

I smiled then switched the phone

I love my mom

"concentrate !!" I tell myself while listening to the teacher but I can't help it but think of yesterday date. I shouldn't have talked to him like that gosh . I stopped myself from burring my face in my book.

And the bell rings indicating break

Bonke steps out of her desk then comes to me .

Bonke: hey boo

Me: Heyy

Bonke: sambe siye eTuck shop

Me: yho boo I'm tired can you buy some for me .

Bonke : what have you been doing .

Winking

Me: just go and stop asking me questions boo boo

She stared at me smiling

Me:just go

And off she went

Oh you may be wondering why she's cool with me . Since she was pregnant we've been together all the way till she decided to abort. It was the situation . We talk but we're not thaaat close .

I take out my math book and doing homework . These days I haven't been on my books and I'm trying my best to catch up

and with June exams around the corner . I need to pull my socks .

"Thanks F" I thanked Bonke when she gave me my favourite snack Doritos -cheese

"Yummy" I said in excitement bonke laughed .

Bonke: don't you ever get tired of these snack ?

Me: no I like them and they like me

I took a bite from one chip

Me: see

Bonke: hay

I continued writing while eating

Bonke: for reals . Now you're gonna leave me talking alone here

Me: but dude (I stared at her ,she she strung opening her eyes wide at me) okay then what were you saying

Bonke: was gonna tell you what Amanda did on Mihle yesterday at the... Um

She clears her throat .I have her full attention now.

Me: what did he do

Bonke : it's more what she did or both dude they are back together.

Me: what!!

I feel like crying but I won't . Probably this is how it feels being dumped and know what when I said to Mihle yesterday me and him are done I meant it and I really do .

Bonke: girl he's not worth it.

Me: I know . Bonke I'm good I broke up with him first so I'm cool. So tell me what is happening between you and Lumko

Bonke: nothing wethu he was asking for my numbers

Me: and ?

Bonke: I didn't give him . He needs to sweat a little .

Me: girl!!!

From a distance I could see Melissa and Lisa looking at us omg
these kids

20

School bell rang indicating the end of school day . Phew what a day . I have a lot to do . You know what from today on I'll concentrate on my books . Forget about Mihle and his drama .

Bonke: bye boo

Me: can you wait for me

Bonke: you ain't staying today?

Me: Nah tomorrow not today I'm so tired .

Bonke: okay hurry up girlll

We walked together when we were at the gate . Bonke stopped to talk to Lumko dude these one's

Bonke: boo don't leave me please

Me: yhooo boo undibambisa ikhandlela

Bonke: what do you want Lumko ?

She asked all giggles and smiles gosh why doesn't she give him her numbers already. she's into him and it's obvious.

I heard sneers behind my back

"Look at her "

"Shame , ushiyiwe"

"Just imagine chommy a person leaves you today . Next day they got another person"

"Mnk!"

So wish they can say that to my face I crossed my arms fuming and glanced at Giggling Bonke Gosh

I heard a high pitched laughter when I looked it's from Melissa .

So annoyed. I stormed out of the gate them went back to my flat slabbing the door shut ndasothula isikhalo sofelweyo (and cried)

~

I can't believe it's been a week . Exams are around the corner and I've been working , working hard to the extent I forgot that a person called Mihle even existed . Or I haven't given myself enough thought of him . To be honest I still love him . But he broke my heart can't believe he is ignoring me . The dude hasn't spoken to me nor called ever since the day I broke up with him . Probably his life is perfect where ever he's at .

Argh

-

Since it's a Friday I decided to go for a swim at school . It's late and apparently the pool closes at 18:00 and now it's 19:30 accurate but I feel like swimming who cares about the time . I mean it's not that far and there's no one now 5 minutes away from school duhh . So I took my bag and put my phone

Advertisement

and wore a swimming costume not forgetting to put a towel in my bag pack .

Then wore a dress on top It's hot outside . I took a deep breath then took my bag pack.

-

I used the old gate then when I was close to the door I noticed it was opened probably they let it open , maybe they forgot to lock none of my concern . Well I think. I took off the dress I wore on top of the costume then dipped my feet in the water. Gosh the water so cold

I got in then played with the water . I feel overwhelmed. That's what happens everytime I get into a pool or sea especially when the water is right on chest's length . I dive in the water ignoring the crickets making noise outside . Is the door opening or I left it open . I came back to the surface

"Hello ? "

"Any body here?"

I feel like I'm in a movie or something . Mxm how stupid . I played with the water around me making smooth circles thinking . My for him . To be honest I think about him everyday but I don't dwell to much . I try keeping myself busy so I don't think too much of him It's pretty amazing how he can move on so fast . And and

"Bhaaaaaaaaaa"

"Ahhhhh!!!!!"

I screamed my lungs out . Oh Gosh Luyanda . Did he had to do that

Me: you freak . Did you have to do that

☹ He shrugged ,drinking water from his bottle then taking his towel off his shoulder dropping it next to my bag .

Me: pshhh I hate you for this . I almost peed on the pool

Luya: ewweeee (he changed to a girly voice) OMG F that's (throwing his hands on the air) so gross yuuk

Then he pitched his nose

Me: oh stop it

I was in stitches This guy thou

We both shared a laugh then unexpectedly he jumped into the pool slashing me till I was wet . Oh I was already w- doesn't matter .

Me: Today you got me right

I said wiping my face with my hands . He came up to the surface

Luya: what are you doing here ?

Me: same reason you're here for

He Chuckled

Luya: what am I here for?

Me: swimming.

Luya: okay Ms Molokai

Awkward silence

Luya:so

Me: well

We said at the same time then laughed

Me: you go first

Luya: no you go

Me: I forgot

Luya: okay was gonna compliment you on sustaining your relationship with Mihle.

Me: are you trying to insult me ?

Luya: no I mean he really loves you

Me: what's your point? Look I know that I broke things off w-

Luya: whooa wait you guys ain't together no more

He said with a smirk

Me: I'm gonna wipe that smirk off your face

I said throwing some water on him getting out of the pool

Me: dude if you're trina make me feel smal-

Luya: I didn't know you guys aren't together anymore

I laughed

Me: you're joking

I took my body towel then started wiping myself .

Luya went at the edge of the pool .

Luya: okay then Pretty. I knew but all I'm asking for is a chance for me

I smiled . Then continued wiping my hair then looked for a lotion .

Luya: look

He got out taking his towel and wiping himself.

Luya: I can make you happy than he did . Baby girl I dig you big time

Me: oh shut up . First first of all Luya saying baby girl is a huge turn off . Awukwazi kuplita man . Do you have a lotion I think I forgot mine

He looked disappointed . Then gave me his lotion then joined in to lotion himself too.

Me: thanks

Luya: you meant that ?

Me: what ?

Luya: I can't plit?

Me: sorta.

Luya: okay ke Pretty Molokai let me talk then I'd like you to be my girlfriend.

Me: so not gonna happen.

Luya: please

Me: nope

I wore my dress put things on my bag then went to the door with Luyanda following me.

Luya: okay then at least tell me why.

Me: I've been hurt . I can't be hurt again

Luya: I don't hurt people mna Pretty.

Me: what's your favourite colour?

Luya: white but I w-

Me: me too

Luya: really

Me: no mine is blue

Luya: oh

We were now at my house. I won't let him in. Then this guy pulled on the most concerned yet sincere look on his face.

Luya: what exactly do you mean by hurt?

Me: I don't get what you're trina say

I sat on the steps so did he.

Luya: did he ...you know

Me: what!?

Luya: like abuse you ?

~

~

~

Am I dreaming or what no I can't be. How did he know? And with that face he is pulling it's like he knows

I slowly nodded right when he burst out laughing

Luya: I pull this prank to my sisters all the time and I'd say your reaction was dope. Dude ... Did you ...no you gotta be kidding me I thought ...I was only joking it was suppose to be a prank

At this point tears involuntary escaped. Why do I cry at this moment. I rushed to open my door then locked wiping tears .

I heard a knock

"Pretty you have to report him"

Me: just go. I won't coz ... coz

Luya: coz what

Me: nothing

He's crazy report him like some one will believe me .

I stayed at the door in silence then he started singing . "I'm a survivor " Destiny child . He's got a good voice this one .

21

Today I woke up feeling energetic . New day here I come . Let it be filled with lots of productivity and joy I find myself singing the song making my bed.

"I'm a survivor (what), I'm not gon' give up (what)

I'm not gon' stop (what), I'm gon' work harder (what)

I'm a survivor (what)

Advertisement

I'm gonna make it (what)

I will survive (what), keep on survivin' "

~

It's break time so instead of Bonke coming to me I went to her

Me: boo

Bonke: hey chom heeee why did you leave me Wena?

Me: yhu Bonke is that coming from you? Ha.a girl .

Bonke: okay ke chom Yami I understand

Me: Sooo ?

Bonke: what? - she gave me those eyes -

Me: what happened ?

Bonke: -she smiled- I gave him my numbers and shame he ain't bad .

Me: mmmhhh

Bonke: it's not a big deal wetsu Wena we must get you a boyfriend

Me: speaking about that heee so yesterday I went swimming me then I saw Luya pha

"Hey guys"

Me: and speak of the devil .

Luya: cela uthetha nawe Pretty Molokai (can I speak with you)

Me: what now ?

Luya: in private please .

Me: Luya I told you I can't ,remember .

He pulled my arm

Luya: khawuze yekuqamza

- come and stop talking nonsense-

I stared at him then went out

Me: uthin(What?)

Luya: you remember I borrowed you a book .

Me: what book Luyanda don't make me mad please

Luya: the one for circles

Me: whi...what

Luya: ha.a girl my book please

I now remember

Me: ohhhhhhhhhh yho haibo Luks kalok I completely forgot otherwise ikhona Yona isendlini .

Luya: so when am I gonna get it?

Me: Tommorrow yhuu mfondin it's a book yini

Luya: mxm I don't trust you so I'm gonna come with you and take it .

I stared at him really . Is he being for real now

22

School over so today I'm staying in to catch up with some reading. We're writing a test in two days so I have to step up my game . Everyone has already left and I'm halfway through the chapter I was reading when someone disturbs me . Y'all already know who it is

"Please close the windows when you go out."

Me: I won't it's not my job.

Mihle: fine !!

He went to close the windows then walked out but but when he was about to exit I shouted "you know you're such a coward !!" He stopped in his tracks and looked at me .

Mihle: what did you just say ?

Me: after one week you decide that it's time to show up .

Mihle: I don't deserve the title coward thou . You don't have the right to call me that you know .

Me: ohk maybe ... I'm sorry I guess

—

At this point I was feeling guilty for calling him that I mean he seems hurt by my words.

Mihle: you know you're nice and have a good heart but to think you calling me names . I never thought that you were capable of hurting someone's feelings .

Argh I now I feel really bad.

Me: sorry Mihle

He walks towards me . I was quite scared of what he might do . He's not going to beat me up . No he won't we're at school . I start to shiver when he touches my curly hair. I stared at him then relaxed a bit then I don't what I'm feeling but it's longing for those lips oh gosh what I'm I thinking. I stare at his his hazel eyes gosh they're beautiful . Pretty !!! Focus don't get distracted.

Mihle:oh okay apology accepted but do-

I stared down to his lips moving they're light pink that reminded me of a rose bud. The top lip was thinner, but not too thin, and it had a natural cupid's bow; the bottom one was larger and more plush. I stared at them. I wanted to feel his lips against mine once more, though they are rough and thin .and his cologne filled the vicinity how much I miss it I wish I could burry myself from his arms.

Mihle: - right?

Me: uhh

I did not hear a thing he said

He gave that concerned face . I tiptoed and kiss him . They still soft and moist mixed with sweetness . His mouth tasted like vanilla . I was surprised when he kissed back then reality kicked in. I pulled out

Me: Gosh I shouldn't have done that sorry

He pulled me back to him then kissed me again then pulling out again.

Mihle: I missed you .

I stared this is not right why do I always have to mess up with him

Me: I gonna pack my books

I said as I did so

Mihle: so you're gonna ignore me huh?

I kept quiet.

Mihle: I really do miss you Princess P

I curled my lips to a smile . I miss that name even . I hang my bag on my shoulder

Mihle: is that a smile I see .

Me: Mihle y'all already with Her and I c-

Mihle: I know b-

Me: Mihle g-

Mihle: shhh (he put a hand on my mouth) I can dump to be with you . You know I love you and you alone

Me: is that what you also tell her? When ..when you're tired of me . When you feel like you need a punching bag ?

Mihle: no of course not . You kissed me that proves a lot and

" Hey guys" Luks on the house .

Luya: sorry to disturb y'all conversation I'll wait for you outside

Me: no actually I think I'm done here.

I stared at Mihle one more time then walked towards the door where Luya was.

Mihle: oh so you're with him now.

Me: no!! Gosh just imagine let's go Luks

We left him there

Luya: that was something. What was that about?

Me: phew!! I think I want him back .

He looked at me with disbelief.

Me: what? The heart wants what it wants Luks.

Luya: as a friend . I advice you not to date with people who already in a relationship. There are plenty of people . (Pointing himself) available ones.

Then he threw one hand in the air more dramatically looking at with all his eyes out.

Me: keep dreaming .

I walked faster. He ran to catch up

Luya: but then think of it. You guys will get back together right then he'll be nice for a few days then hit you again. You don't want to put your self in that type of situation again.

Me: he seemed changed.

Luya: Pretty Molokai do this for yourself , your health just imagine saying you ran into a pole again because of him . The cycle will continue friend.

I rethink what he just said probably he's right . We finally arrived . I took my key out and opened.

Me: wait here while I take the book

I went in the cupboard I store some things there . Nope

This room is a mess where will I start looking for it. I heard Luya laughing with someone outside mnk ! Doesn't matter . I kept on looking. After about 15 minutes

Luya: dude!! Ive been waiting .

He came

Me: Hima(wait)

I found it!!

Luya: your room!!

Me: I've been busy okay Ina

I gave him the book

Me: sambe (let's go)

I escorted him outside

Luya: uSis Lulama called you.

Me: oh you were talking with her

Luya: yeah she's cool that one .

He said smiling oh and Luya is more like Mxolisi Xulu from Kwamashu in Uzalo

Me: okay bye then Luyanda Masango

Luya: okay bye Pretty Molokai and thanks for the book.

Me: mnx Wena Luks kanjan

I said going to sis Lulamas flat . Ahh boxes and suitcases

Me: haibo sis uyaphi? (We're you going?)

Sis: owhoo kid you still don't greet even now.

Me: no sis I'm not playing here. Are you moving out?

Sis: yes my baby I found a better Job in Joburg some I'm heading there .

Me: haibo Sisi

Sis: ligeza laphi Eli bendithetha nalo belime ngasendlini yakho(who's that crazy boy who was next to your house ?)

Me: oh uLuks no that's my friend from school.

Sis: akabhadlanga lamntana umvile uthin ubezama undiplita ke sana. (That kid is nuts. He was trying to ask me out)

Me: uwhooo

Sis: mnk... but ke sometimes I'll come to see you. Don't worry that much about me leaving.

Me: still can't believe you're leaving. Ahh I'll miss you

I hugged her. And found myself crying. I'll sure miss her .

Sis: sikhala (don't cry)

Me: can you at least give me your numbers

She gave me and seconds later a truck came to collect the staff . I helped her put them in the truck and then hugged her one more time .

Me: travel safe.

Her: thanks nahnah .

I watched her as she climbed the truck and it drove out. Watch it till it fade .

Me: bye.

Mihle POV

To think that at 18

Advertisement

I'd turn out to be like my d- no I'm not like him. Probably there's some sickness I have coz I can't control my anger towards her . Honestly I love her with my all, heart and soul. I never thought I'd fall for someone this deep. You know when everytime you look at someone your heart skips a beat. Mine still does and now when she kissed me ,it brought hopes that somehow we'll get together. I know we always do even though there are some misunderstandings and complications. What I know is there's nothing wrong I did . I just got very angry and I couldn't control myself especially I was drunk that day I slapped her . But most probably I'm wrong by hitting her . I think I have to apologize coz somehow I do feel guilty . After her few words at KFC I literally couldn't sleep a blink but life carries on so I just ignored it. But now everything is coming . The way I couldn't sleep when we broke up is 10 X more

I miss her terribly . Her scent and smile , courage but for now I guess I'm gonna be stuck with snoring Amanda . Making the two of us . We're still together . Do I love her . No.

Me: hey

I smacked her ass

Amanda: babe (she turned to look at me speaking with a sleepy voice) really you're gonna wake me up like that?

Me: I'm sorry but man!! You gotta go .

Amanda: already ?! So you're tired of me ?

Me: no if course not babe but today I have some stuff to take care of.

Amanda: you can do all that with me here .

Me: it's just I don't wanna be disturbed .

Amanda: okay then I'll go take a shower before leaving .

Me: you can't. What I gotta do is urgent

I kissed her cheek then mouth

Me: please .

Amanda: okay babe I will go .

She dressed up .And I was getting ready for the conference meeting I was having with the gang.

Her: I'm leaving now bye babe . Don't forget I love you.

Me:Same

Her: you're not just gonna say "Same" are you?

The meeting just started

Me: Hello gents , are you all in ?

Blake: Spindle excused himself Sir

Amanda: Mxmmmm

I heard the door slab .

Me: yeah I'm listening.

Luyanda: I don't think it's the perfect thing to go rob the bank after the job we last did last week.

Me: Luyanda shut the fuck up who asked for your opinion!!!

Luyanda: Just saying!

Me: we go ahead with the plan okay. -only a few say yes- I SAID OKAY

All if em: Yes boss

23

Pretty PoV

The sound of a truck woke me up from my peaceful sleep. I wiped my eyes to avoid seeing blurry . I rushed outside to see what's going on . It's the truck that ... Sis Lulama is back. I ran towards the truck as people started unpacking .

Me: sis Lulama

I went off to the passenger side to greet her.

Me: Hi Sis L- where is she? And you what are you doing here?

And that was Siphos , the guy who hosts the best parties . Yes him

Siphos: I'm moving in and no I'm not Lalma

Me: it's L-U-L-A-M-A

Siphos: okay Lalma it is .

He said jumping down to the ground from the seat.

Me: whatever what made you move even and why here ?!

Siphos: sundiphambanela apha cinga yindawo yakho wedwa Leh?...mbombakho mnx

Hey Nina mazize ezo boxes (don't get crazy on me. You think that's is your place? Mnx)

Me: mxxm

I walked back to my room to prepare for school.

So loo akazuya eskolwen (he's not going to school).

When I was walking to the gate I saw Luyanda

Me: funa nton Wena?(what do you want)

Luya: not a way to greet your friend

F .

He smiled

I fake grinned

Me: happy now.

Luya: ndisaya Ku Siphon apha man kasele undilinda . (Going to Siphon please wait for me)

Me: hurry time is not on our side.

-

After 5 minutes

-

Me: that took forever let's go .

Luya: iDrama .

Me: Hahaha you have more than I do actually .

Luya: wait what !!

Me: serious .

Luya: (he poured)

Me: Soo cute

Luya: mxm ... Pretty Molokai

Me: Luyanda Masango

Luyanda: I have to tell you something.

Me: yeah shoot

He seemed serious

Me: what you're scaring me now

Him: it is quite scary thou

Me: thetha Luyanda (Talk)

He stopped in walking and took my hand

Me: uh..ha.a

I looked at him he's worrying me now

Luya: I... I... No just can't

Me: talk what's up

Really concerned now

Luya: I am gay ...gosh I said it . I actually said it can't believe I did

Me: oh Luya that ain't bad but it is shocking but I'll always be your Friend .F

He just hugged me into a tight embrace and warm .

Luya: Issa Prank F

I'm not gay!! I'm straight straight

Me: Jerk

I hit him hard on his arm.

Him: shit this girl .

I ran afterwards and he didn't run after me just walked.

Him: I'm not playing with you

Walking with revise as I spoke

Me: you started playing.

Him: girl you can hit girl! my arm hurts

I stopped to wait up on him .

Me: stop being a cry baby Mr gay .

I hit his arm once more on the same spot

Luya: ouch!!

I laughed so hard damn this one is good at pranks. When we reached school apperantly we were late.

Mihle: late comers I see . Detention 2 hours each.

Me: Mihle you can't do that i-

Mihle: school rules Pretty .

Me: but I thought t-

Mihle: you thought wrong now that you're with *him*

Me: mxm

Mihle: okay then Princess P , one for you but for him it's still two .

"So unfair" I mumbled.

Mihle: what did you say

Me: I said move out the way

Luya: let's leave the pussy alone .

Mihle threw a fist on Luya but Luya grabbed his hand and then Mihle twisted his arm . "Kruuuu...kruuuu" dunno where that came from who .

Me: stop !!

They did and gave each other a death stare

Luya: let's go Pretty Molokai

Me: with pleasure Luyanda Masango

We walked to the assembly .

"Ouch" I glanced at Luya closing his eyes like he's in pain .

Me: you're okay?

Luya: yeah yeah I'm cool. You good?

Me: yeah

-

Detention

-

So today we're suppose to stay for an extra time assisting at the Library and Luya just stepped in for his shift too . We both sat at the front desk

Me: hey you

Luya: mmnh andifuni nothetha ubona nje (don't wanna talk right now)

Me: okay Mr .

I stared at the door .

After a few minutes I decided to do something with this time other than doing nothing. I read Life science. Female reproduction

Luya: yheses!! Yintoni le siyfundiswayo(what are we learning)

Me: something you might come across with . You gotta know!!
The cycle how often a woman goes to periods !

How they bleed when the egg is not fertelized.

Luya: then you have to wear pads

Me: Yeo your right .

Luya: does it hurt?

Me: what?

Luya:the bleeding and

Me: oh ukumensa (period) yes it does.

Luya: yuuk that word

Me: 😊😊

Luya: so it really comes once a month?

Me: yep and have one hell of stomach pains even pain killers don't help.

Luya: a whole stomach . Thank God I'm man

Me: Gay

Luya : mnk!!

He threw his hand to make a soft punch on shoulder.

Him: I can't feel my arm

Me: let me see

I rolled his sleeve

When I checked it was swollen a bit and a bit green brownish .

Me: hospital now!!

I called the ambulance while going to Mihle for some help . He helped when we were putting Luya on ambulance

Mihle: sorry that had to happen .

Me: I'm going with him.

Mihle: over my dead body. Detention?

Me: my hour is over

Mihle: 2 minutes left .

Me: mxm

I went back but after that I ran after the ambulance as it just moved getting in not forgetting to put his and my bag leaving Mihle behind .

24

Mihle's POV

Luyanda thinks he won jackpot now. Argh at least he warned me about this I remember this day clearly

~

Flash back

~

The night/ morning before I went to Prettys flat . Before our date at KFC

Luyanda: if you treat her like shit trust me brother she'll leave you like a hot potato.

Me: it's just the way you were staring at her . You know we don't do that to each other . You don't look at her like that

Luyanda: no I wasn't

Me: you were flirting an-

Luyanda: it was talking . Man if you can not treat her right the way she is suppose to be . I'm gonna do that for you trust me on that one.

Me: over my dead body!

He took a sip from his beer then clenched his jaw . A beautiful jawline that I always wanted appeared then he smirked revealing a dimple.

Luya: Try me .

Me: we're friends , gents don't do that you won't do that .

He chuckled , at this point I lost my temper and pushed him against the wall . Grabbing his upper T-shirt . And positioned for a fist

Luya: beat me up !! That's what you're good at right .

He then chuckled I punched him . He punched me back on my nose . I think it broke .

Me: bastard!!

I went to full force to punch him back but he grabbed both my hands I was fuming with anger.

Luya: take a chill pill. I won't .

He chuckled

Luya: like hell I won't . You don't own her that's the thing .

I was boiling

I finally let myself go

Then pushed him ,he fell then I threw punches on him.

Luya: okay okay I won't touch her . Leave me alone

I stopped and stepped aside we went to clean ourselves .

He stared at me wiping the blood on his arm.

Mihle: I'm still not cool with you thou

I walked out of his bathroom . Yeah this is his house. And went to the balcony and this one followed and stood next to me at the balcony.

-

He took a lighter and put his hand on his pocket taking out a cigarette then putting it on his mouth.

He then light the cigarette , inhaling then exhaling the smoke into a small thickish line .

Luya: okay .

Luya: but man I'm just warning it's just that ...she doesn't seem

...

Me: what?!

Luya: happy

Me: you're fucking with me . She is happy .

Luya: the mark on her face?

Me: I don't know maybe she hit the pole or something . But
Luya what ever you do man remember she's mine .

Luya: okay master

He exhaled again

Luya: I'm out . Deuces .

He went down the balcony then entered the entertainment room. Yeah he's rich this one. We're more like the same amount of rich but ke we don't show it that much and that's why he'll be moving out to stay in some flats I don't know . But one thing I know as much as he messes with me like this he won't touch her .

I'll make sure of that .

~

End of flashback

~

I'm thinking

Advertisement

did he really mean that . This guy is a player ,one of the most wanted in school. Jus yesterday at some function we went on he has a threesome and now he wants to go fucking Pretty . Over my dead body . I'll warn her about this ,I have to

Amanda: babe you've been quiet what's up?

Do you like the food?

-

No your food is horrible. More like dead dogs meat /steak whatever this is . Of course I didn't say that

-

Me: yeah yeah it's ...you now what . Leave

Amanda: what?!

Me: leave . You and I are over .

Amanda: you gotta be kidding me you're not dumping me Mihle !

Me: I guess I am

Mom: that won't happen .

Me: you won't make decisions for me okay Amanda take your stuff and leave my house

Mom: "our" ho-

I looked at the woman who I call mom but isn't my real mom.

Me: my house let that sink in your thick skull.

Go Amanda .

-

She was already in tears .

Amanda: if I leave now. I'm leaving for good and Mihle don't you ever come back to me again.

Mihle: I don't care !!

Mom: you'll care soon , don't worry my baby.

She brushed my shoulder

-

Amanda went to the spare room we always use to pack her stuff.

-

Good redence . Maybe I might start saving instead of having a person wanting 2.5 K wigs .

-

Pretty PoV

-

It's 23:00

I've been here since 15:00 they taking things slow . At least he was finally attended . When I become a doctor I gonna make sure people are well taken care coz here I've seen at least two people die , one was stabbed but because his case wasn't urgent enough he was left and another one had a brain injury but also because it wasn't "urgent" enough he died apperantly to internal bleeding.

Life we live in.

-

I went to see him and the doctors say he'll be discharged tomorrow. He has cement on his arm.

So now we were just chilling

Me: should I call your parents?

Him: no they went for some business trip.

Me: at least let them know .

He looks the other side

Him: its not like they care .

Me: oh I'm sorry

Him: it's fine

He turned to me

Him: just wanna be out of here .

Me: you're gonna be discharged tomorrow . Yeeyy

Him: we're writing a test tomorrow shirt

Me: so you're here moss

Him: I haven't read a thing F.

Me: you'll tell them you were here.

Him: I wanna get discharged tell the doctor that . I'm calling a cab

Yerrr it's gonna be hard using my left arm .

It happens his right arm was the one that had trouble.

He was almost in tears since he wasn't noticing me I took a picture. This will be a good meme.

So now I was in my flat . Luyanda went back to his home with the cab which I doubt coz the way he was chatting with that person it's like he knew him.

25

"yho didn't sleep a blink F" yawning

And that was Luyanda complaining to me about his decision of studying till 06:00 . Wasn't my fault.

We were sitting at the playground chairs just chilling during break time .

Me: but F you had a valid reason not to not to write the test .
Yet . You could've sent a note or something

Luya: I hate hospitals plus I had no reason to stay .

Me:check up ! Duh

Luya: nevermind that.

Me: you gotta go attend that today F .

Luya: ☹ andizi (not coming)

Me:mnk!! Hayke

He took a glance at me

Me: what ?!

Luya: thank you .

Me: for what?

Luya: for being there , you know my whole life I've never had a friendship like this and I know this is too early to say but you mean a lot to me.

Me: ahhh that's cute .

I played with his cheek.

Luya: I mean it

Me: I do also . It's cute and you're cute .

He popped out all his eyes .

Luya: so does that (biting his lower lip) mean that you and I are finally getting together ? (He raised a eyebrow a charming way *on his thoughts*)

Me: No Luks

Bell rang , we walked back to class silently till he spoke

Luya: baby girl I can make you happy. You feel me . I can make sure your needs are well taken care off and ...and I can dance too . Look he tried doing gwara gwara . Just imagine with that hand that has cement which had over 20 signitures trying to dance.

Me: you look like a dying snake .

Some girls giving me stares . Like literally for about 10 Min .

After school I walked with Bonke to the flats . We were going to do an assignment together.

Me: don't mind the mess

Bonke: it's cool .

Me: want some juice or drink .

Bonke : yes please

I took fusion from the cupboard then took some water to mix then stired .

Bonke: you know you never told me why you broke things off with Mihle . I want the full story .

Me: oh that one (rolled my eyes)

I poured the drink into a glass then gave her .

Me: boo what he did...

I can't tell her about what he was doing to me probably she'll judge me or something.

Me: he cheated .

Bonke: (gasping) with Amanda?

Me: yeah .can we talk about something else .

Bonke: mmmh I feel like you're lying to me.

I looked down .

Me: okay !! He slapped me.

Bonke: what?!! He did what?

Me: he hit me okay .

Bonke: but what did you do to deserve that ?

Me: so I finally decided to give him my virginity and the day after I don't know where he went but came drunk then he tried to kiss me

Advertisement

I refused . Then he slapped me.

Bonke: but kalok chommy wena why did you refuse the kiss ?

Me: he was high or whatever ?! Drinking

Bonke: then it's not like it was his intentions to slap you.

Me: boo . He did that purposefully .

Bonke: maybe it was the things he consumed . Come on chommie you dump him for that ?!

Me: mmmh

Bonke: look chom (she took my hand) you guys had an amazing night I mean. Y'all had your first "you know " and I don't think that he intended to slap you and all .

She then folded her arms

Bonke: now tell me , who would do that ??

Me: you're right thou

Bonke: yeah I don't think he's doing whatever he's doing purposefully serious friend sometimes you just have to talk with him about such things maybe why he did it . But

(Taking a sip .)

Like I said he won't do it purposefully.

Me: can't believe I let him go. Now how will I get him coz ... He already has a girlfriend.

Bonke : girl !! You're late I mean he dumped Amanda years ago

Me: really

I found myself beaming .

-

After we're done with the assignment I walked her half way to the hostel.

Me: night boo

Bonke: night boo boo see you tomorrow neh.

Me: yeah yeah

Bonke: bye Mrs Mthethwa

Me: soo early.

-

I walked back , now it's quite scary now I'm walking alone .

I kept looking at my back .. I looked . When I looked again I saw a figure wearing all black with a hoodie .

I walked faster . I looked back he was walking faster too . I walked fast ,fast . He walked faster too . I started running then he ran after me . I ran . And ran. And ran. And ran till I saw the gate . I took one more stride then tripped on the rock falling with my hands stretching on the small rocks then my knee . I turned and I could see the figure approaching me . There was

no time to get up coz he was right in front of me now . I moved my hands then body backwards .

Me: please don't kill me I'll give you R10 that I had p-

He took off the face mask . Mxm Luyanda Masango

Me: I hate you

I got up and punched his one good arm . How come I didn't notice the cement but it's like I would have coz he covered it up pretty good.

Luya: Xolo(sorry) now stop punching me woman.

Unless you want to destroy my other arm.

Me: Fuvk you

Luya: sorry

I stared at him blankly

Luya: let's go

We started walking

He glanced at me

Then bust out laughing

Me: What

Luyanda: "please don't kill me . I'll give you -"

Me: mxm

I went inside my flat he later got in .

Me: what are you doing here ?

Luya: I moved here and my room is right next to yours.

Me: God have you foresaken me .

I looked at him . And looked at my knees they were bleeding .

Luya: About that . I think I have kit

Me: you better

He went to take it and I boiled some water taking vascom. He came back then poured Dettol on the water putting in gloves .I put my feet in

Luya: mmmh sunuki inyawo Pretty(smelly feet)

Me: Khaw hlambe wethu yeke inyawo Zam(wash and leave my feet)

He slightly chuckled.

He then washed my knee gently . Shame he's using his left arm

.

Me: so how do you write having your right arm broken.

Him: ndili left(I'm a left handed)

Me: oh interesting fact.

-

After all that was done.

Me: thanks

Luya: pleasure

Me: Luyanda

Luya: yeah

Me: I have to tell you something

Luya:aha

Me: I think I'm going to get back with Mihle.

Luya: have you lost your mind.

Me: I'll be happy .

Luya: noo. Noo. Friend F. No

Me: you don't want me to be happy .

He now has his one arm on his waist .

Luya: at least with someone else Pretty Molokai. Some guy you may happen to like maybe but not him

He threw his hand in the air .

Me: F probably he changed and ...

Luya: mxm I don't have time for this

. I'll come tomorrow Maybe you'll be in proper senses.

He stormed out.

"Luya" I said softly after the door slabbed . I drank milk from the fridge then took my clothes off wearing nightie. Opening the covers and slipped in.

26

Early in the morning I was visited by Sipho.

Me: so what can I do for you

Sipho: Luya came with a suggestion on Cooking

Me: okay

Sipho: you cook we buy groceries. Done deal.

To think of it . I may eat whatever I want so cool.

Me: I'm in . Why didn't he come himself and tell me that though.

Sipho : dunno . So by today we'll have all the necessary groceries.

Me: cool . You know what I have to see him

I went to his room as Sipho went back to his.

Me: open up

He opened.

Luya: yeah .

Me: can I come in?

Luya: no .

Me: still mad about yesterday ?

He smiled

Luya: come in .

I walked in

Luya: sit

I sat on the bed since it's the only place to do so.

Luya: listen . Pretty . He is dangerous .

First thing. First thing he thinks of telling me is that .

I stood up and attempted to leave but he grabbed my hand and pinned against the wall.

Putting one hand on the wall.

Luya: I think I am in love with you Okay and I just can't stand to see you being unhappy .

Me: I won't be unhappy I promise Luya

He was staring at my lips hard

Luya : but I can make you happier .

He leaned in and came closer then closer "gugugugu "

"Luks let's go , it's time"

Luya: okay!! Argh Siphoh did he have too.

Me: um let me help you with your bag.

Now I'm not sure if I should give Luya a chance or what but I mean. No. Whatever

I took his bag and I and Siphoh carried it once we got out not forgetting my bag. I kept glancing at Luya I can't stop myself

-

After school I took a swim . I have to rethink everything .

"Heyy!! I knew I would find you here"

Me: hi

Luya: so

Me: so

Luya: so?

I got out and dried myself sitting next to him.

Luya: what will happen to us ?

Me: nothing

Luya: what almost happened

Me: what about it? We are never gonna happen

Luya: owk

Me: I'm gonna get back with him !!

Luya: owk

Me: so you're gonna say "owk"

You have nothing to say now ha brave brave e-

He kissed me that was unexpected . I was surprised I responded. He pulled out.

Luya: I dig you

Okay okay whoa okay no this needs no thinking I think I like him . The fact that Mihle is capable of dumping me means a lot. What I'm I saying but shame Luya I should give him a chance.

Me: um okay let's do this.

Luya: Thank God!! Finally .

I hugged him ,his embrace is always warm . I suddenly felt nausea .

Me: excuse me I have to use the bathroom.

I ran to the bathroom and went to the nearest toilet and threw up . I vomited for a good 2 min . After I cleaned myself up I think I am a bit dizzy but I'll be fine. I drank water and sat down a little. When I thought I was fine I walked back

"Okay will tell her"

Me: tell her what , that's my phone you got .

Luya: are you okay ?

Me: yea yea

Luya: okay so how do I put this . your dad died.

I laughed so hard

Me: you should stop pranks now please dude that ain't cool.
But it's a good one .

Luya: but this is true

Me: I don't believe you

Luya: serious it is true

Me: let me call her

I called her and she told me the same thing there's gotta be
some mistake not my dad. Not my dad. Not my dad. Not my
dad. Not my DAD!!!!

Luya stood there speechless.

Luya: um um I don't know what to say . Let's go home .

He took my things and his and we walked to the flats . I didn't
cry but I was down.

Luyanda's pov

To be honest I don't know how I should comfort . I have never in my years of living have to comfort someone . Some of the chicks I use to have fun with catch feelings but when they do and start crying I always kick them out or be like " I don't give a fuck cry all you want" . But I never got to hush someone . So now I was sitting next to her on her bad . She's been down and emotionless since she received the news.

Me: Friend F

And oh I like that word but now since everything is still new i guess let me keep things neutral .

Me: um ... Are you fine ? Obvious you're not . Gosh what do I do what do I do

I took my phone and searched the internet . "What do I do if someone is crying"

Results

1. Ask why they are crying
2. Try hugging them
3. Tell them everything is gonna be okay .

Me: let me start with the first one .

Okay

I started panicking and I heard a soft sneer . Is she laughing?

Me: what?

Pretty : jus get out of here.

Me: I am your boyfriend so ...

Pretty: look I'm good I think I need some sleep now just some rest.

Me: okay then

Advertisement

take care

Hugs

Pretty: please

I hugged her tight . Her strawberry scent filled the vacinity . I brushed her back then made a soft pat .

.

Me: shout if you need anything okay .

Pretty: I will .

I smiled at her she smiled back .

I opened the door the shut. Went to my room Jackpot !!
Honestly what I feel for Pretty is more than I can explain . Ever had a connection with someone and you feel like ...like I don't know how to explain it. Connection like they get you . And you feel comfortable with . Like a friend or best friend should I say but marnnnnn I love her period .

And seeing her broken broked me. Her pain is my pain . It just happened just like that. The attachment. I've been attached to her since I started helping her that day but Mihle had to destroy what I had with her. Nx yeah Mihle is my best friend practically a brother I never had . We've been friends since birth and our parents were always close .

-

I lay on the my bed and doze off in thoughts.

I was woken up by hunger . I didn't eat I heard someone blowing their nose .

I think that's Pretty so I went to check I knocked . Silence

Me: it's me.

Silence

Me: open up

She opened

Her: you should be sleeping .

Me: come on wear something nice I'm taking you out.

Her: it's raining .

And yeah it was drizzling

Me: don't worry about that

I wiped some tears left on her cheek .

Me: it's gonna be ok

Her: I'm fine plus I don't want to go out. I'm fine

Me: okay then you'll accompany me

Her: mind you . It's 00:05

Me: just get dressed

I went to my room and wore sweatpants and a hoodie . We're going to KFC no big deal .

I borrowed Siphos car keys then went to check on Pretty

She was wearing a dress she looked amazing ,her body looks so damn fine she's got hips and some butt but yet shes small but all those boobs and small waist are in the right places . This is too much

Pretty: am I good no I think I'm gonna change .

Me: a..um you look good

Pretty PoV

-

It's just the way he was looking at me it's like he was surprised or something . I think he doesn't like it . But this is a dress I usually wear when im jus home nothing special

Luya: you're sure you ain't overdressed.

Me: nooo Im comfortable

I took a jacket.

-

We ordered well he ordered I offered to pay my half but he refused and I didn't get why he bought 15 pieces and were only two.

We also bought cool drinks and two burgers.

Luya: eat up

I took a bite on my burger.

Me: I never got to ask you . Where you from ?

He still had meat on his mouth but he spoke anyway
"Chjdddba"

Me: eweee . Finish eating first

He laughed

And chewed up when he was finished

Luya: Cofimvaba is where I was born but I grew up in East London

You?

Me: Queenstown

I smiled

Luya: wow I see Komani nearby Cofimvaba .

I nodded

Luya: so how many siblings do you have ?

Me: two brother and sister . Both annoying

Luya: I wish I had those annoying siblings coz I have none . I'm the only

Me: must be nice you get all the attention and money and everything I didn't mention.

Luya: loneliness on fleek no it's not

Especially with a mom and father like mine . She's a "business woman". And he's the "business man"

Me: but that must be nice I mean at home I rarely get what I want coz Milisa needs it more or your brothers turtion are expensive honey. It sucks big time that's why I say you're lucky

Luya: it's not like it seems . Like at home my parents are always busy and I grew up staying with Aunt Gonas she's the mother figure I ever got to have and believe it or not the last time I saw my mom was last year December and it's June now . Just imagine they never care how I'm doing in school never call or what when I tell them I miss them they just send money . See

-

We had more and more chats . This one talks . We talked about cars . Houses . Girls at school . Girls in general . Boys . Places we'd like to visit as for him he already went to US . I can't believe I at 4 pieces of meat and he eat 7 pieces

-

So tomorrow I'm going home and the funeral is Saturday today is Thursday and it's a holiday .

28

"Uh

Now I dun' been through the storm and the rain
Climbed up the rough side and got tough at times
But I remain, if I got the stuff to shine
And pull out the pump, protect mine
Survive in the game, hate on me 'cause you lame
They don't ever see your face or say your name"

As I taking a ride home those were the lyrics from Survivor
Destinys Child ringing on my mind.

When I arrived home . It's fully packed

I could hear people chatting

" Sewkufumene utya Dzodzo?"

"Hambo biza uSgude azotyia uthi makabengethi uza nesitixo
kuyaphakwa ngok "

-

I wheeled my suit case to the house on the way met my sister Milisa .

She smiled innocently

Me: can you stop smiling and help me with my bags !!

Milisa: adfuni !! (I don't want)

Me: yeka (fine)

I wheeled my things to my room then I walked down the passage meeting my brother . He's always shy when I come back well he's shy it's his nature .

Kuhle: hi

Me: hey

He then walked to his room

Weird right . I know . I never had that bond that other people seem to have but we bond in our way that many people wouldn't understand .

==Friday night ==

There was umlindo -something done more like inkonzo yokuqgibela- his last church .

There were many people here and someone grabbed my shirt

"kukho ubhuti okucelayo apha phandle" -someone asks for you outside-

"Hay ndiyeke mna"- leave me alone-

Me: whats his name?

"Dunno but from school . That's what he said "

Oh okay

He showed me where the person was. I can not believe this Luyanda came . how did he know that

Me: hey how did you get here

Luya: is that a way to greet your boyfriend .

Me: no

I hugged him . His cologne filled my nostrils and his warm body was comforting .

Me: thanks for coming

I squeezed him

Luya: ouch my arm babe .

Me: sorry . So how did you get here?

Luya: apperantly someone coming this side hitch hiked and to my surprise they were coming here . I got her from town thou .
Wanna see her

You can come out

-

Ah Sis Lulama . I ran to hug her

Sis: sorry for your loss

Me: and thank you for making it . You have no idea what this means to me . Thank you guys

I was getting teary

Sis: ah don't cry

She wiped my tears .

Me: let's go guys

We went inside so I have to organise a place to sleep . I showed them where to sit while I prepared food for them .

So Luya will sleep with my bro while Lulama with us . My sister and two cousins .

While I was preparing our room

"Ngibani ABA?!"

Advertisement

Tyhini this ndiyalingwa , ningoban ? "

I rushed to the dining room . Mom is not suppose to shout like that moss.

Me: mom

Mom: whose this boy whose busy changing channels like this is their home. Pretty !!! Pretty what did I say about boys

I swallowed.

Mom: Pretty you have the gila, une gila mntana ndin (you have a liver) the auditory to be bringing boys in my house next time a person is pregnant

Me: I'm not pregnant!

Mom: eventually you will if you keep doing this my child . It's a warning. This kid must go

Me: mom he's gay .

Mom: gay?

Me: yes he likes boys and he's not interested to me .

Luya and Lulamas eyes popped out but they picked them and put them on again .

Mom: ohh

Me: and plus mom they are my friends so they came for support.

Mom: mmh I don't buy this story of yours but if you say so .

You know uzenzile akakhalelwa .

-what you do upon yourself .you don't cry over it-

Mom: hayke kulungile (it's fine)

Mom and her drama.

-

Luya: Pretty can you come here for a second-i went - can I have your numbers

At this time - in this situation - after what happened .

Me: 066****

Luya: I never got them coz there was no need and girl your mom .

Me: you gotta be prepared to act more gay.

We both laughed

-

Luyanda Pov

-

Prettys mom is such a mood

So I slept with Kuhle Prettys brother . We didn't talk at all I mean even saying hi . In the morning I woke up wearing boxers I don't think there's anyone awake coz it's super early.

I walked in the bathroom still sleepy I didn't notice that there's someone until I heard the shower and guys I was doing number 2 . Yhoo I took the spray behind me and tsuuuuuu opened windows . I flashed . Ayihambi . And flashed again

Me: I don't know what to do now .

I flashed again. Finally

And some lady went out of the shower . Sexy as fuck shuuuu ! Water dripping on her body . Wet hair . Juicy pink lips. Pale skin . Clear black eyes with long hair . Big boobs and hips . She waved her hair backwards is she doing that on purpose coz that's way too slow motion .

Her: hey there .

She fixed her towel showing clevege and turned trying to reach for her gawn revealing two butt cheeks

"Damn " she's so fine .

Her : like what you see ?

She walked to me

Her: you know you can have me here if you want . Right here right now

She tip toed to kiss me while she put a hand on my boxer then we had a knock .

Her: there's someone

Me: I gotta go (whisper)

Her: see you lover boy

I walked out went back to the room and threw myself on the bed putting one hand on my eyes . Yerrrrr can't believe what jus happened.

" I know that feeling"

I looked , look who decided to speak.

Kuhle: don't you ever try hurting my sister . That's my sister for goodness sake and if you're gonna cheat on her . If you're gonna c-

Me: I'm gay

Kuhle: oh ...wait if you gonna hit on me. I'm straight straight I ain't playing with you like that .

Me: I can make you gay .

I looked at him with eyes full of lust . Jus to see what he'll do

Kuhle: cut the crap I won't fall for that.

I bit my lower lip repeatedly then twisting my lips and showed my jawline . He stared at me with eyes full of questioning and a bit of lust .

Kuhle: I'm not gay

He hit me with a pillow case then walked out . I laughed so hard gosh did he actually fall for that . Ha.a shame dingy phopho .

[Do y'all watch Ezee and Natalie or Young Ezee vlogs on You Tube . You see her jawline. The one like that one]

-

The funeral went on very well shame . He was such a dignified man . Lucas Molokai . A teacher . Husband . Brother and father

.

Rest in peace

-

After funeral I called Pretty .

Me: hey you

Her: hey F. I'm coming with the plates do not worry .

Of course she had to keep our dating a secret coz her family !! .I was in the sitting room when a girl I don't know came to sit next to me .

Girl: hey

Me: yeah

Girl : how are you handsome ?

Me: good you

Girl: I'm Sindi and single by the way .

Me: okay I am Luyanda

She kept twisting her hair and running a hand through it.

Me: nice to meet you Single or Sindi

Her: I w-

Food came

Her: I'll feed you since your arm is like that

Me: okay -is she got reals-

"No you won't " the girl from the bathroom .

Pretty walked in .

Pretty : I see you met my cousin's.

Me: yes babe can we get out of here .

29

Sunday

-

I woke up . Usually on Sundays we go to church , with my dad but this Sunday is gonna be different.

Me: Milisa wake up , we're going to church .

Milisa: I am not going .

She continued sleeping

Me: owwk I'm leaving you

I went to make porridge for everyone . Sis Lulama is gone she departed yesterday . So it's me , my two cousins their mother which I call her aunt , my mother ,Luyanda

Advertisement

Kuhle, Milisa and no one else .

I drank pain killers coz wow my head was killing me .

It's not my idea that we went on some club but Alunamda's .

I went to take a bath then wore ordinary clothes the. Went to wake Kuhle and Luyanda

Me: Phiwokuhle Molokai !! And Luyanda Masango !! Wake up!!!!!!!

Kuhle: what's up with the noise !!

He said sleepily

Me: we're going to church munchies

Kuhle: not going .

"Nguban loo ungayi ecaweni-whose not going to church-" that's my mom .

Mom: khanivuken - wake up -

Mom walked out

Me: Luya

I went to shake him

Me: wake up

I shoke him violently hoping he would wake up. Tuuu sanasi pinched him hard . Haibo is he still breathing . I pinched again . I dunno what to do now

"Suka" -move-

That was mom with a bucket of cold water with ice . Jwii amanzi Kubo

They woke up now now

kuhle: WTF is that for !!! Yerrrr

Luya woke like he was lost

Luya: God what just happened?!

Me: we're going to church . Wake up!!

Me and my mom walked out

Mom: hee these children

Luyanda Pov

What a way to wake up .

I walked to the bathroom and took a shower while I was busy singing there I heard the cover moving . Gosh does Alunamda have to do this now.

Alu: hey there

She said taking her towel off revealing her hour glass shaped body . Guys !! You know those Instagram girls with good bodies . Curved hips , flat stomach bug boobs and ass yeah that.

She walked close to me and pushed me against the wall kissing me firmly and she put my one good arm pinned on the wall

I tried pulling out and did that successfully

Someone opened the door and opened water on the bathtub
Judging by her singing it's Pretty.

Me:(whispering) look what happened yesterday was a mistake
now get out of here

Pretty: somebody here.

Me: she's coming she's coming

I opened the cover revealing my head only

Me: it's me babe .

Pretty: I would love to joi-

Me: no!!! I am almost finished.

Pretty: do you seriously think that I would with mom here . By
the way porridge is ready so hurry up

And she walked out!! Phew

So yesterday we decided to go to an after tears party . Wasn't
my idea but Alunamda's

-

Flashback

-

Alunamda: hurry up guys

She said standing next to our door

Alu: Lungile is waiting for us pha

Kuhle: mntase have you talked with Milisa to cover for us.

Alu: yeah cuz everything is on point , hurry up kalok

-

I was wearing white and black shirt then shorts . Kuhle was wearing a white over sized T-shirt and blue jeans .

Me: ready

Kuhle: yeah

We walked out .

We walked to the car apperantly we'll find others there.

When we got in the car

Pretty: boys like girls . I can't believe you guys took longer than us.

Kuhle: he's the gay one

Pointing at Luyanda

Kuhle: I was already finished (putting his hands in surrender)

My phone rang

Mihle and what does he want. And now we are not in speaking terms so what does he want really

Mihle: have you seen Pretty by any chance?

Me: no I have no idea where she is bro .

Mihle: where you're at ?!! Bro you got some girls in there

-

These girls where screaming for the Umlilo song .

-

Me: party . I gotta go .

Mihle: if you happen to see her by any chance tell me. And Luyanda don't you touch her.

Me: I won't

I dropped the call he's crazy acting all cool when he treated me like trash recently. So this one decided to take my chick last month just imagine. Is that a friend mxm...

But don't get me wrong . I do like Pretty Molokai . Who wouldn't like her she's humble as F . A good girl I like her .

-

We arrived and as soon as we arrived my favourite song played.
Wanna hear it . Labantwana ama Uber !!!!

-

I danced as soon as I got out the car and Kuhle was looking at me like crazy.

Me: labantwana ba wrong.o labantwana ama Uber

-

The party was lit people dancing on the table and it was packed shuuuu!! The kids where gorgeous Shuuuuu!!!! Damn oh I'm suppose be gay. No not now . To control myself I think I should be with my girlfriend

Me: baby

I held out my hand she grabbed it. She looked beautiful with a nude rouge two ponytail with curly hair .

Jumpsuit and silver necklace with a heart . Cute I know .

Me: you're so fine .

She blushed

Pretty: thanks

Me: let's dance

I don't know where others where but what I know is we were dancing our butts off.

Hoedown by Miley Cyrus played oh I know the dance

-

Lyrics

-

I give you a barbecue show and tell you how to move if you're 5 or 82 this is something you can do.

Pop it lock placa dot it countryfy then hip hop it put hands in the sky move side to side jump to the left stick it glide

—

After that I went to the couch while Pretty went to the bathroom

Me: be safe babe .

I sat next to another cousin of Pretty

Cousin: so you're gay but dating a girl.

I laughed

Me: yeah you caught me I'm not gay . But I'm dating your cousin . Don't tell her mom thou

She zipped her mouth

Me: cool

Cousin: I am sorry for what I did earlier I thought you were just another random person.

Me: it's cool why did you mind if I ask?

Her: wanted to make my ex boyfriend jealous.

Me: naughty girl

We shared a laugh

Me: what's your name by the way I never got it.

Her: Maya

Me: nice to officially meet you Maya

Maya: pleasure

Me: so thirsty , want a drink I'm getting one for myself .

Maya: sure

I walked to where the tables were at and took a cup pouring two drinks .

"Hey there " I lifted my eyes only to meet Alu's eyes . Her outfit is way too revealing . Boobs out hai this silk crop top of hers and also short short shorts

She took one drink the one I already poured and drank it .

Putting the now finished cup on the table.

Me : mind helping with carrying this glass to your sister

I gave her one cup while I took a one flying fish . She walked down the corridor butt cheeks out dammmn.

—

Pretty came and sat in between me and Alu

Then she wisphered on my ear .

" Can't let her get cosy with you" she softy bit my ear . That feels good . Then my neck is she making a love bite . Then she kissed my mouth . She's good . Then she looked her cousins

Maya: get a room .

I slightly chuckled .

Pretty: babe let's go play that game .

It's a game of being the best drinker. Don't look at me like that this is not my first party

We got there . Pretty against Alu

Kuhle against me

Pretty started . She had only three shots and Kuhle took her to nearest room because she was drunk way too much . I made sure he locks it. Oh I'm friends with the owner of this house that's how he got hold of keys .

Then me against Kuhle

I drank my first

Not that strong

-

Seventh

I looked at Kuhle

Kuhle: I give up

Me: another one

This round I drank 4 . Pierre passed out

Another one

Drank 6 ,won

I won the R3000 yheyyyyyy !!

I don't remember everything but I remember someone walking with me next thing were in a room and they are undressing me . When I woke up ouch my head . Is that music ?

"Hey there " we should get going

Is she ...is she on top of me . She rubbed my abs brushing it and making smooth circles on me . Guys you won't understand what I was feeling at this moment. I groaned in pleasure

Alu: you were great a few minutes ago . You want some more ?

-

Confused as Fuck

The door swang open.

Kuhle: and look what we have here.

I thought you were gay(he said this line almost hurt with a shaky voice . Is he gonna cry ?)

I don't know what happened but he attacked me with a fist and punched me repeatedly

Kuhle: My sister doesn't deserve you !!! She doesn't !!

Alu busy crying

Happy - my friend walked in to stop this .

Shit my nose . I wiped the blood on my mouth .

Me: please don't tell her

Happy: Friend I think it's best yall leave. My brother is taking Pretty home

I'll take you back .

Alu : get out I need to get dressed .

As for me I was wearing boxers I took my shorts and shirt then walked out after noticing Kuhle staring at my butt . Is he checking out . My but is a bit big for a male

Pretty POV

-

On the way I took my phone and decided to call Mihle . I was drunk don't judge me .

Me: hey I just wanted to tell you I miss you Prince M

Mihle: are you drunk ?

Me: no I'm fine but Mihle I love you . I love you I love you I love you

Mihle: I love you too. Look where are you ?

Me: huh?

Mihle: where are you?

Me: home my dad dead .

Mihle: I am sorry why didn't you tell me babe. I'm coming for you look I love you okay . I promise I have changed I'm even seeing a therapist . I promise babe .

I dropped the call.

I arrived home and threw myself on the bed. Lights out .

-

Mihle's POV

-

I was studying when a call disturbed me

To my surprise Pretty called me . I've been meaning to call her but call he and say what? So I've been attending therapy and they say I have post trauma and aggressive that's why I've been like that and I'm more than willing to change. And for her . Luyanda advised me to go to this therapy a month ago I refused but now because I want her back and her only. I'm willing to do anything

-

I packed clothes for tomorrow and suit for church .

I drove to Queenstown and slept at a BnB coz it was late morning . I went to an Anglican church and sat at the back . That's when I noticed Pretty , Luyanda and some people of

course her mother. This will be hard . After church I drove back to BnB for my clothes then I can herd back to Pretty

-

Prettys PoV

-

I swear I saw Mihle maybe I am paranoid.After church we had family dinner . And the tension between Kuhle and Luya . What happened to Luyas nose .

Me: and your nose Luya ?

Alu: sorry Pretty but Luya an-

Luya: would you shut up !

Mom: and what for ?

I heard hoota . That car . I know it .

Me: am I missing something?

Honestly I don't remember what happened yesterday clearly but what is Mihle doing here?

30

Knock in the door . The whole table looked at the door . Indeed Mihle Mthethwa is in the house .

Mom: ufuna nton wena apha-what do you want?-

Mihle: molwen ma kumnandi ukubona futhi-hello ma it's nice seeing you again-

Mom: ndithe ufuna nton ?- I said what do you want-

Clears throat

Mihle: I heard her father passed away so I came to show sympathy.

Mom: mmmmh hlala phantsi Alunamda phaka-sit,Alu dish up-

Aunt: not my kid , Alu sit down .

Alu: no I don't mind ma

She said with eyes blinking looking down . Mihle took a seat next to me and took a glance at me . While Luya was doing the same .

Now what do I do?

Mom: hey jonga ke Mihla -look here Mihle-

Mihle: Mihle ma

Mom: lonto iyiyo , Lo wam umntana soze umfumane nanini na semncinci lomntana . -whatever listen you won't get my kid she's still young-

I felt nausea and dizzy I ran to the bathroom . Probably it's bile.
Maya came in the bathroom too

Maya: are you ok cuz

I threw up again

Me: I am fine

I threw up again and felt a bit dizzy.

She brushed my back and poured water for me .

Maya: are you sure you're not pregnant.

Me: I don't know

Maya : I'll buy pregnancy test okay .

Me: I'm scared .

Maya : don't be .

She brushed my back while I cried.

I didn't plan for this . It happened only once and now this happens no no no that's not how I planned my life .

I walked in the sitting room and it was tense. Everyone looked at me .

Mom: uright mntanam?

I nodded

Me: I wasn't feeling okay I'm good now.

I sat next to Mihle while Maya walked out .

Aunt : heyyy uyaphi(where are you going)

Maya: to buy pads

Kuhle choked his food

Kuhle: gross yuuk

I laughed .

Mihle: you seem uneasy are you sure you're ok ok ?

Me: as if you care .

People were now making small talks . Table filled with laughter

Mihle: you called me yesterday

Me: no I didn't , you wish Yaz you wish .

Mihle: you did I can even make you listen to the call.

Me: ok let's say I called. It changes nothing I am with Luya now

.

Mihle : that son of a b*

Me: hold it if you gonna talk like that about my man .

I could see he was fuming

Mihle: Luya can I have a word with you.

Luya: no

He said drinking juice .

Luya: nice suit by the way

—

We were now watching TV Luya and Mihle staring at each other like hawks .

Luya: what are you looking at ?

Mihle: so much for a friend , loser.

Luya: what did you say? What did you say to me.

I punch flew straight to Mihles nose .

Alu screamed I was shocked but it was expected.

Kuhle stopped them

Kuhle: stop it stop it . I get that you both dig my sister as for this boyfriend of hers that s-

He stared at Luya .

Luya: please don't I'll do anything.

Kuhle: anything?

Alu watched in anticipation of something .

Alu: Alright I'll tell her

Mom: what's happening here ?

Me: nothing fighting over remote .

Mom: ohhhhhho

Mom: jongani ke . I and aunt Zen are going to town neh . Kuhle look over these kids wena.

—

Out they went.

Me: Alu what did you want to tell me.

Alu: th-

Luya: shut the fuck up would you and you Mihle what really made you come here ? Clearly you're not welcomed here

Me: did something happen ? !

Luya ignored me .

Luya: Talk MIHLE I don't have all day.

Mihle: I came for what's mine . You know I'll say it front of everyone.

Luya: Pretty is mine , you had your chance and to be honest I love her and Damn she can move she's good this one

Kuhle: Sis Luyanda after sleeping with Alunamda you still have the gila igila mfethu .

He wanted to beat him up and I could see he was aiming for the broken arm . I blocked him and he hit my stomach

Kuhle: Pretty !!! Move I'm sorry

I fell and groaned Mihle ,Kuhle came to me.

Me: don't do that again as for you Luyanda pack your things and go .

Luya: babe he's lying .

Alu: no he's not .

Luya gave her a death stare but she didn't change her statement.

Me: Luyanda out . I can even help you pack.

Kuhle: I'll help

Luya: I don't need your help I was already leaving .

He got up , got in the bedroom Kuhle followed then shoutings followed.

We watched him leave after saying his last words

"Pretty just know it wasn't my fault but hers and for the record how dare I'm labelled as a cheat while he can call you and talk sweet nothings on your ears"

Me: can jus leave

Luya: with pleasure .

I wheeled his suitcase furiously .

Me to Mihle: as for you don't think we will ever get back together .

I stormed to my room and just stared at the space.

Milisa walked in and brushed my back.

Milisa: it's okay sister , you'll be fine

She embraced me. I needed that .

-

I also need to pack it's school tomorrow but not exactly coz exams started.

Just when I was thinking of her she came in

Maya: I'm back let's go .

I cringe but went . She bought 4 . I tested them all and all negative phewww . Right then my period decided to come. Oh thank God.

-

So when mom came back I said my good byes to everyone.

And you won't believe mom even gave Mihle potatoes from the garden and spinach same as me and some for Luya .

Mom: so said Mr gay went off early with out even telling us .

Me: he was in a hurry mom

Mom: it was nice having him thou. As for Mthethwa Thank you for the support it means a lot.

So mom is cool with him now.

Mom: please can you go with Pretty I believe y'all going to school but there's a but I still don't approve you dating

Mihle put his hands in surrender

Mihle: maybe it will be better if I bring the cows .

Mom: no ha.a not my kid .

He seemed a bit hurt.

Mihle: I'll prove it to you that I am worth to have her then .

Mom: khanihambeni - go -

I hugged everyone except Alu of course. Talk about relationship breaker . Honestly I kind of liked Luya . The connection the bubbly personality he has . The way he sees the world like he's not afraid to do what he wants. If he feels like dancing he does . And the pranks. But he betrayed my trust.

-

On the road it was silent it's just me and Mihle.

Mihle: so are we cool?

Me: cool what's that suppose to mean.

Mihle: I'm a changed man. I even attend sessions . I ha-

Me: I know .

Mihle: but you still won't take me back ?

Me: Mmmm lemme think .

No

Mihle: why ?

I know you love me .

Me: who lied to you

Mihle: now you're playing hard to get .

Me: and you just missed the Banana bridge .

Mihle: I did ?

Me: you're not even turning back .

Mihle: I'll use this route.

Me: whatever .

He juhs stared.

-

We arrived in East London and he juhs took the branch to Beacon Bay

Me: what are you doing ?

Mihle: to see my parents.

Gosh I am not ready for this but I guess I have no choice .

Mihle: don't be nervous Im sure they'll love you .

Me: we both know they won't.

Mihle: I won't argue with you on that one but I know they will love you.

-

Pulled in the driveway . So nervous

o

o

◦

He closed the door behind him and there's no one here.

Mihle: Gran is probably sleeping .

I was so shy guys you have no picture

Some slay queenish girl walked down stairs .

Her: oh and who is this .

Mihle: Ntlahla this is my girlfriend, Pretty

Ntlahla: hi Pretty Nice to meet you

I'm not sure if she said that sarcastic or what

"I am Mihles sister " I thought he didn't have any siblings thou .

"Step sister" Mihle corrected then she soft punched him "shut up" .

Ntlahla: so brother are you going to spend the night here . Okay thank you so much I missed you .

She made a puppy face .

Mihle: I think so but wasn't planning to.

Ntlahla: thank you thank you .

Jaden is upstairs by the way

Mihle: come let me introduce you to him .

Ntlahla: haibo yini Sister in law

I wanted to steal her a moment. We were going shopping !!

Mihle: Mnk!!!

Ntlahla: what? I was bored and plus there's nothing to do at the boutique

Mihle: let's go babe

We walked upstairs . She seems nice . Mihle knocked in a room written No entry ☹

"Read the sign" Someone inside said.

He's got a deep voice , wasn't expecting that .

Mihle: it's your brother open

Leaning at the in the position of knocking.

After a few seconds the door flew open . A young looking man with spectacles , *nerds* with a sleeveless Red T-shirt and grey sweatpants . Appeared

-

His room is like mine a mess and has a lot of computer stuff .
Talk about a computer geek .

He took his hat written COOL revealing short blonde dreadlocks . I noticed he's way light in complexion -Yellow bone if you may ask me- On his face had a scar under his grey eyes with pointed eyebrows-like Jera in Generations eye brows- Does he apply make up coz that skin is way too perfect no pimples no nothing this is unfair. He's good looking more than her sister . Does he have to have clear eyes like this like nothing ever went in his eyes .

-

I guess this is Jaden

Mihle: Thanks for letting me in at last

Jaden: and who is this ?

He said lazily it's like he's sleepy is he always like that?

Mihle: my girlfriend Pretty

Jaden: oh okay that's the first. Hi Pretty nice to meet you.

He smiled revealing a white set of teeth.

Me: same here

A guy who looks the same as Jaden was at the corridor

Jaden : hey Jaden ...hey hey you won't ignore me on this one.
Mihle finally brought a girl home.

Oh so it's Jaden and Jason . I got it wrong

Me: whose Jaden and who is Jason

Mihle: Jason has a scar and Jaden has freckles

-

We were called for dinner and when we arrived . Mihles mom
was there and some Grandma and Ntlahla.

We sat and all eyes on me .

Mihle: I believe y'all asking who this is . She's my girlfriend .
Pretty.

Grandma: Pretty with a pretty face

I blushed

Me: thanks grandma

Haibo the granny had nails and yet she looks 70

Grandma: who are you calling grandma

The table chuckled.

Jason: we call her Sisi .

Me: ohh

I was so embarrassed

Jaden : don't worry about her too much she still thinks she's young.

He whispered

M.mom: molo Ntombi yasezwen - hi girl of the world-

Can't believe you follow Mihle everywhere he goes. Jonga Mihle will get married

Ntlahla: but he didn't chose that so what are you gonna do about that?

M.mom: but we all know she doesn't deserve him.

Ntlahla: if there's who doesn't deserve someone . It should be Mihle not her so please.

Oh so she knows. Too.

-

Later on Ntlahla insisted we go for shopping. She took a mini cooper. I got to know that she's turning 21 and owns a fashion boutique.

We went at Hemingway's mall we bought some cool stuff . Stuff I always wanted . And there's a dress I've been eyeing . It's a nude dress sleeveless I think it's cute but I didn't buy it.

-

Got back and Ntlahla allocated me a room . Mihle was still up .
Waiting for us in case something happens.

-

I slipped in the most comfortable bed I ever got into . The room
is nicely decorated even . Oh I forgot to switch the light when I
went to switch someone held my hand I guess he was switching
it off too.

But that gave me a fright.

Mihle: you know in TV when they touch something at the same
time and then they look at each other's eyes and-

Me: get out this is not TV

My heart was racing . Is he wearing a towel only and he is
dripping wet. He's sexy I never took notice of those abs six pack
. Wow .

Mihle: you know a picture lasts longer .

I cleared my throat

Me: sorry umm

I even forgot what I wanted to say . He lifted my chin up and
looked me in the eye . Juhs by him looking at me makes me
feel... I can't describe it but marnnnnn I love this guy I don't
know how I would live without him now that I met him . With

him I feel complete . I know this sounds crazy . Crazy crazy crazy but guys ...guys have you ever loved someone so deep that no matter how much no matter how much you try forgetting them and hating them you juhs keep on loving them more. They do mistakes you get angry but not for too long . And you juhs love them . Hay mna I think I am biwitched or something like that not like this .

My heart beating fast I swear he can hear it . Now I yarn to be with him with everything bit of my body against his .

He pecks me on my lips and i kiss him passionately . I want him . I want more of him . All of him

His eyes were getting small and red as he massaged my boobs then kissed my neck making love bites . He threw my nightie off then kissed my boobs to my-

Me: I'm on my periods .

He stopped in his tracks then sat up.

Mihle: oh so you sleep with Luya but with me, you don't want to . Babe akho pad apha .

Me: -kinda embarrassed- I use tampons.

Mihle: I don't know what that is and I don't want now .

Me: - I laughed- babe I didn't sleep with anyone other than you . Come here let's cuddle

He went undercovers and entigiled his leg on mine .

Mihle: I love you

He kissed my forehead

Me: I love you too

.

Following day

.

The sound of birds shrimping . I woke up and the sun pieced on my skin leaving me chilled. Mihle was not on my side anymore . Wonder where he went . I yawn and got my feet to the ground searching for sleepers . Ohh it's so beautiful . I thought this was only in movies . A trail of roses leading to the bathroom oh . I took my gown and walked to the bathroom .

Candles lit on the sides of the bathtub . The water already filled with foam bath . I ran my hand through it . It's still warm .

-

What a relaxing bath , I've never had such in my whole life . I walked out of the tub took my gawn and walked out of the ensuite bathroom. Finding Mihle sitting on the bed with breakfast on the tray.

Mihle: morning gorgeous .

Guys I blushed . I don't know what to say I walked to him and stood in between his legs and kissed him biting his lower lip slightly . He groaned . His hands all over me, this moment is so electrifying , exciting . He grabbed my butt and went down putting his hands in between my thighs . I gasped for air . As much as I wanted him this had to stop before it gets too far. I'm on my periods.

Me: babe

Mihle: mmh ha.a no babe

Me: I'm on my periods remember.

Mihle: how long does this take Kanti

Me: three days . After they over I promise I will be yours .

I noticed he had made breakfast. Porridge he caught me staring .

Mihle: oh I asked Dona to make it for us and you and I are spending the morning here.

I stripped the gawn off and he's jaw dropped.

Mihle: babe you are you don't want us to . You know

Me: thank for the porridge and the strawberries?

I changed the topic , he made puppy eyes and he finally answered my question .

Mihle: you know couple feeding each other.

I dressed into gown again then went to the bathroom to take care of some business.

When I got out Mihle was making the bed.Sweet.

I helped him on the other side

Mihle: thanks mother of my kids .

Me: really ?!

Mihle: what would you say if I made you pregnant?

Me: kill you

Mihle: and your mom's reaction yho can't cope.

We shared a laugh at that one then sat cosy on the bed eating out porridge .

Eating in silence .

He finished first and took strawberries and started eating .

Me: and me ?

He stopped half way into biting the fruit . Then redirected the strawberry to me.

Mihle: tShu tShu (train sound) and here comes train (I opened my mouth) through the tunnel.

I chewed up , we ate all the goodies . It was only fruits thou Bananas peach you name it.

Then we sat there cuddling . Guess what we got inside covers again . Air mixed with berries and sweetness filled our 1 inch space that's how close we were staring into each other's eyes . His eyes are light light brown which is quite rare compared to my dark brown colour.

Mihle; you got something on your mouth he sticked his tongue out and wiped me

I giggled coz he was now on my neck making small circles with his tongue .

—

We were disturbed by a knock on the door . Mihle took the tray to the door

Him: now where were we?

I giggled

-

Later we joined everyone for lunch. Everyone looking at us with gooey eyes . What up .

I sat next to Ntlahla

"Hi" I greeted.

"Hey , you are glowing girl"

Me: what can I say

Ntlahla: next time please keep it down guys yhoo .

Embarrassed

Me: so sorry

Ntlahla: it's cool 😊 so today we are taking you for a make over!

Me: we?

Ntlahla: and Sisi she has taste don't worry .

Me: mk

—

We ate in peace . M.mom not on my case wel of course coz she's absent.

Mihle: hayke ladies see you when I see you neh . Baby

He pouted

Mihle: see you.

I pecked his lips.

Mihle: I have something to take care of but I promise I will be back before 6 .

Me: what's that you have to " take care off"

Mihle: grown people stuff

Okay what is it that I don't have to know

Me: whats that ? Talk Mihle!

Mihle: shopping babe chill .

Me: almost had heart attack .

He buried me into hug . His cologne smell so good like fresh water and manly.

-

" Dark Maroon lipstick please" said Sisi . I've been sitting on this chair for like what 3 hours . I had to do my hair , fix my nails . I didn't put any fake nails thou I roll with my natural so I apply a black q-tex . My hair was straightened then make up - I went for the natural look with smokey eye.

Ntlahla: perfect. Girl you look good . Uyababa you are flames .
Girl !!!!!

Me: thank you

We drove back to the house and Ntlahla took me to her room .

Her: so I've decided that you wear this and this

Me: first it's way too short . Second I ain't going nowhere so .

Ntlahla : okay then can you wear it just for the sake ke . Its my present and you're gonna at least try it on .

-

It was a two piece typa thing . A short with a cover in front more like a skirt in front but at the back shorts . A black crop tee that showed line between the boobs.

-

Ntlahla: yep this looks good on you

I heard hoota

Her: can you go check

I went and Mihle

Mihle POV

—

Before we go back ...

Me and my wife are going to a date but she doesn't know yet . I hooted and she was suppose to come that's what I arranged with Ntlahla.

Gosh?!!! Who is that hot chick walking down the driveway . Damn she's she's Beautiful . She's walking on slow motion soze kalok .

"It's you all along" Pretty . They did her and her outfit marnnnnn . All the boobs ass everything in the right places.

Her: a picture lasts longer

31

Mihles Pov

-

I found a love to carry more than just my secrets

To carry love, to carry children of our own

We are still kids but we're so in love

Fighting against all odds

I know we'll be alright this time

Darling, just hold my hand

Be my girl, I'll be your man

I see my future in your eyes

Baby, I'm dancing in the dark

With you between my arms

Barefoot on the grass

Listening to our favourite song

When I saw you in that dress

Looking so beautiful

I don't deserve this

Darling, you look perfect tonight

Ed Sheeran_Perfect_

•

I take a glance at her for the time . God really took time with her . She is BEAUTIFUL . I almost bumped into a car coz I kept staring at her beauty . I gave her heels when we were at the parking lot.

Her: where did you find size 2 heels ?

Me: I have my ways

She kissed my cheek.

Her: thank you

We arrived at the most expensive restaurant in EL . It's classic .

I pulled a chair for her and the waiter came. We put our orders

.

Music played , classic

Advertisement

so we waltzed she's pretty good and flexible .

Me: ever had ballet class?

Her: yeah mom made me take them

Me: I see by the way you move .

The a soft slow song played . Thinking out loud Ed Sheeran

-

We were walking next to fountains . With the sky full of stars and moon . It was beautiful and that's when I took the moment to give her this promise ring.

Her: this place really exists . It amazing look at the fountains and -

What are you doing?

That's when I kneel down on one leg and

Me: with this promise ring . I promise to love you through thick and thin... Thinking back how a mess was with out you in it. How didn't smiled and now I've never been happier

She was crying

Me: you accept?

Her: yes !!

I slipped in the ring in her left hand second finger from the left and fourth from the right. The only finger that has vein to the heart.

-

Next day we hit the road.

Singing along the way like crazy

-

"Waiting for the time to pass you by

Hope the winds of change will change your mind

I could give a thousand reasons why

And I know you, and you've got to

Make it on your own, but we don't have to grow up

We can stay forever young

Living on my sofa, drinking rum and cola

Underneath the rising sun

I could give a thousand reasons why

But you're going, and you know that

All you have to do is stay a minute

Just take your time

The clock is ticking, so stay

All you have to do is wait a second

Your hands on mine

The clock is ticking, so stay

All you have to do is

All you have to do is stay

Stay _ Alessia Cara

-

Shaking my head like crazy , Mihle staring at me like something is wrong with me but that smirk on his face needs to be wiped off with a kiss. And I did just that on his cheek. Windows rolled down. Air blowing my hair to my face . Staring at my ring then taking wisp of my hair and tucking it over my ear. Whuuuuuuuu I've never been so happy .

32

Mihle PoV

I woke up next to the prettiest girl I know both inside and out . I kissed her forehead and she moved her eyelids and opened her eyes .

Me: morning gorgeous

Her: hi

She lazily smiled

Me: let's go take a shower together

Her: we're going to get late .

Me: please

I said kissing her nose

Her: okay then

-

As soon as I got in the shower . I opened the shower and held her waist .

Me: now what am I to do to you .

Her hair wet , water running on her perfect body . She looked beautiful . I applied a soft kiss on her lips and ...the rest is history.

Prettys PoV

-

"Dude stop following my tail" I said to Bonke coz she kept asking me where I was yesterday

Bonke: I mean both you and "head boy " were no where to be found.

Me: so it doesn't mean that we were together

I walked in my class . She followed . Talk about Followers

Bonke: mmh but you're glowing , you look much more happier

And some grade 8 kid walked in and gave me this letter with a rose . I attracted some eyes.

"I'm in love with you, and I'm not in the business of denying myself the simple pleasure of saying true things. I'm in love with you

Advertisement

and I know that love is just a shout into the void, and that oblivion is inevitable, and that we're all doomed and that there

will come a day when all our labor has been returned to dust,
and I know the sun will swallow the only earth we'll ever have,
and I'm in love with you."

-Prince M

I blushed . Ahh that's so sweet

Bonke: girl !!

This one is too forward I can't believe she read it with me.

Bonke: you guys are back together .

She screamed and hugged me .

Bonke: details boo details please

Me: well a lot happened . He introduced me to his family and-

I told her everything not in detail detail thou .

-

Ghost POV

-

Y'all know Zade as Mihle well he crossed paths that were never
had to be and stole from me!! "It's my father's property" he's

words not mine and now he pulled out of the game just like that . I couldn't track his location for a long time but yesterday my boys found a clue that he was here in EL driving with his girl . He must love her since he even introduced her to the family. He never does that. See he's gotten weak.

Our leads are correct now he's heading back to " school" . Just imagine a school boy!! Robbed by a school boy. I know just a way to make him pay all of what he stole from me

33

The school bell rang indicating the end of school . I collected my books while Bonke waited for me. I hanged my bag on my shoulder and we walked out of the class .

On our way Luya joined in.

Bonke: and you ?

Luya: what?

Bonke: she obviously doesn't want you near her

Luya: ok

Bonke: so leave

Luya: nope

Haibo Lamborghini I'm this place everyone screamed at it . Yho guys but it passed

Me: that's the first

Luya: let's hope it won't be your last .

Me: mxmm just go away

Luya: I am going the flats I ain't following you .

We walked in silence then said our goodbyes to Bonke when we were at the gate.

-

Luya: I am sorry .

Me: is that all you can say . Is that all you can say after sleeping with my own bloody cousin sister and you just say sorry .

Luya: I was drunk okay an-

Me: it doesn't matter . She is my cousin Luyanda my cousin

Luya: but you also called Mihle .

Me: I was drunk

Luya: exactly my excuse

Me: it's not the same . A phone call isn't cheating .

Luya: oh really

Me: I don't even remember what I said.

Luya: but you know that the words you said drove you right back on his arms . That jerk

I hit his arm with a soft punch

Me: he's not a jerk and please what I chose and what you chose isn't the same . So please Luyanda Masango don't ever call me again don't text don't do anything . Don't even come to my room

I took my key out and opened . I was welcomed by a mess . I need to clean this room . I started doing that right away after I was finished I walked outside then walked in again just to see how it looks to someone entering . Clean .

I wiped the table right when Siphon knock

Me: hi come in

He had mealie meal 5 kg meat all the type of food .

Him: you remember the agreement

Me: oh that okay . I'll start cooking right away

And I did just that listening to New rules by Dua Lipa

Me : And if you're under him, you ain't gettin' over him

I got new rules, I count 'em

I got new rules, I count 'em

I got new rules

Advertisement

I count 'em

I keep pushin' forwards, but he keeps pullin' me backwards

-

After 30 minutes I heard a knock Luyanda Masango. What does he want.

Me: and?

Luya: can I come in ?

Me: ok

He sat on the bed since it's the only place one can sit.

Me: and?

Luya: I came to apologize .

Me: owk

Luya: so?

Me: look I don't take cheating lightly a-

Luya: how many has Mihle cheated on you

He asked this calmly

Me: we're not talking about him but you hard headed. You know how much trust is broken knowing that it was my cousin th- in fact get out . I said get out.

Luya: I'm waiting for my food.

Me: I'll tell you when it's ready

My phone rang. Prince M popped on the screen I beamed from ear to ear.

Me: hi baby

Mihle: hello my princess , I miss you .

Me: I miss you too .

Mihle: can I come over ? Or you come over?

Me: you can come over

Luya: but he ain't eating our food

Mihle: is Luyanda there? What does he want ?

Me: he was just leaving baby don't worry

Mihle : I am coming over .

Call dropped

Me: see what you have done . I don't get why you're giving me a strong reason to hate you.

Argh just go.

Luya : okay

He smiled and off he went .

5 minutes later Mihle burged in

Mihle: where is he ?

Me: in his room

Mihle: are you with him !

Me: no Mihle how can you ask that .

Mihle: he was here with you in the same room

Me: my baby is getting jealous

Mihle: no I am not .

His face turned red is he blushing my baby is blushing .

Me: you're blushing

Mihle: no I am not .

It's just I don't like sharing my woman . Never be alone with him again please.

Me: babe I think that's impossible coz he lives in the same block as me . Next to my room! How possible is that !

He out a heavy sigh

Me: babe you trust me right .

Mihle: yeah I do babe I mean you had a thing with him and now he's with you in the same room

Me: shut up it's like you never had a thing with Amanda but I never rubbed it on your face .

Mihle: well that different

Me: different in what sense ?!

Mihle: don't make this about her!!

Me: well don't make this about me either !!

Me: know what . Just get out!

Mihle: that's unfair

Me: want me to drag you out

Mihle : you won't do that

Me: you don't know me

I pushed him to the door

Me: until you trust me equal and fair then I think that's when we should continue with our thing .

Mihle: but babe this is not the same thing Amandas case

I slabbed the door on his face . He called me I ignored it . It kept ringing till it stopped.

30 minutes later door knock

"What Mihle?! I told you tha- " oh Siphon and Luya

Siphon: food

Me: oh come in I was about to dish up .

-

We are eating while Siphon was busy making jokes that weren't funny to me . I guess

Siphon: Why do we tell actors to "break a leg?"

We all shut up .

Siphon: Because every play has a cast.

Then he bust out laughing

Sipho : okay let's try this one

Hear about the new restaurant called Karma?

No one :

Not even Trevor Noah

Sipho: There's no menu: You get what you deserve.

We fake laughed

Yho this is weird

Sipho :

Knock! Knock!

Us :Who's there?

Sipho: Control Freak.

Us: Con...

Sipho: OK, now you say, "Control Freak who?"

He laughed I am so confused right now .

-

After that weird supper they all went out and I washed dishes .

Few minutes later I heard a loud moan and who is that . Oh God does Luya have to do this now . He's got a girl in there. Mxm

34

"Class dismissed"

I was woken up by that high pitched voice of hers ,she thought it was the loudest but tell you it hurts my ears . At least during the period she was talking low well very low to the extent of fell asleep

I walk to Bonke desk with a book in my hand . This one is sleeping too I bit her head with the book .

"Ouch!"she groaned in agony.

"Wake up" I said bitting her again.

"Okay I am up I'm up" we walked to the Shops

~

Mihle POV

~

Me: What do you mean following her

I was in a call with Luyanda Masango ring a bell . Yeah him .
We're in business together remember.

Luya: The Lamborghini , have you ever saw a Lambo in
Matatiale nope . It's the second time it passes. And according to
my sources . Gkkcdhznshnbukkmvfv

Me: simple layman's terms please.

Mihle: tracking the Car according to its GPS it's from East
London.

From Gonnubie owned by Dwang

Me: any other leads .

Luya: nope im still looking.

Silence

Luya: it's hard tracking this person down but I'll give you answer by the end of the day.

Me: better do one more thing find me two young guys . They must look young ok

Luya: (whisper) yes sir

I dropped the call

-

Luya works as a Computer guru he's very good with them

-

I called my baby .

Her: hey

Me: hello Princess I miss you

Her: ok

Me: babe

Silence

Me: baby wam

Me: still angry

Her: yes

It's hard admitting you're wrong when you don't want to. I have to admit then no choice. I miss her so much .

Me: okay I was wrong I shouldn't have spoken like that I am sorry babe please forgive me.

Her: lemme think .

Me: please

Her: ok I forgive you. Can you come fetch me now . I miss you

Me: I miss you too

Her: wait we're writing next week right .

Me: yeah Physics

I was now on the road

Her: oh I have to study then .

Me: we'll study together.

Her: owk that's cool I could do that too.

But promise we will be studying.

Me: you can. Assure me that you also know you won't SbwI this body

She kept quiet then followed by the most cutest laughter

-

Plus it was already weekend it's Friday.

As soon as I arrived she was already waiting and she ran to me I hugged her and picked her up bridal style . I saw Luya sitting from the stoep he looked frustrated shame .

Me:let's go baby . You have no idea what I am going to do to you .

-

She put an aux cord then played music.

Chris Brown no guidance

Beyonce - if I were a boy

Closer -chain smokers

Her: baby pull me closer in the back seat of your rover

Both: that I know you can't afford bite that tattoo on your shoulder

-

Once we reached the house I couldn't help myself any longer . I pecked her soft sweet lips kissing her hungrily. I grabbed her and put her the counter taking her shirt off

Someone clears their throat.oh it's just mom

Mom: in my counter Mihle

Me: you mean my counter

Mom: in my precious kitchen with this thing of yours

Me: she's not a thing jeez woman .

Let's go baby

We walked up stairs

Me: don't worry about her

Her: I know she hated and worse with no reason .

-

I know there is a reason. Because I chose Her instead of Amanda.

Pretty: let's just study maybe

Me: but babe we were st-

Pretty: I'm not in the mood.

Tjo hayke I have to kill someone for ruining my babys mood coz
I am in the mood.

-

My phone rang

Me: talk .

Luya: it's Ghost.

I try to keep a straight face

Me: thanks marn

I dropped the call

Pretty: everything fine?

Me: yeah babe , got the books?

Her: physics first then math right

Me: yeah yeah

Now what do I do .

—

We stayed in the house the whole day while M.mom went out some where I don't know.

Cuddling at the couch watching the Notebook . I suggested it . He stroked my hair playfully ,repeatedly then rolled it on his hand .

Mihle: which shampoo do you use

He asked smelling my hair .

I take me off his chest and stared at him

Me: what are trying to insinuate ?

Mihle: nothing babe it's just your hair is soft . And smells nice

Me: dark and lovely

He nodded while he kept playing with my hair

-

I was in tears coz apperantly the couple was back together after her being so close from getting married to another man she didn't even love as she loved him

Me: they're so cute babe

I could see his smile was fake .

Mihle: yeah

Me: babe(ب_ب)ಥ~ಥ

Mihle: babe don't cry kalok , I don't get what's there to cry about .

I covered my face and ran to the room for tissue caba I hit the corner of the door the plung part on my teeth hard to the extent it almost fell

Mmmh I cried more

Mihle: babe kalok these people are back together moss ngok so

-

He said that walking to me and he was shocked to see what he was seeing .

Bandages on my neck and cheek with my teeth already taken out and filled with some fake something I don't know at least I don't have to stay in this hospital . It's a private one thou .

Monday

—

I walked to school pretty early and I was the only one waiting at the gate to be opened when the blue Lambo came approaching slowly almost stopping .I heard someone shout Luya

Luya: you left your towels

How I hate that

I ran to where he was .

Luya: I am joking

Behind him we're two boys I don't know one yellow bone and other dark and quite good looking shame.

Me: you don't joke like that

I gave him a death scare it was a death scare in my opinion but he laughed . Mxm I walked to school

—

Assembly

—

First period English

Teacher: Today these two students will be joining us . This is Thapelo and Thami

People started whispering girls smiling . One sat behind me and the other one next to Melissa

I took a look back at him he's scary. I swallowed then looked forward .

—

A week later , exams almost over my teeth are way better .

We were sitting in the park having a picnic with Mihle .

I took a bite from my apple

Me: I tell you babe those guys are scary yho especially the one sitting behind the desk I sit in. He likes looking at me scarily like he's watching me or something

Mihle: really

Me: babe I tell you you should show him who you are.

Mihle: no one messes with my property you know so too

He maintained a straight face brushing of something on my cheek.

Mihle: watermelon

Me: thanks Prince M is everything alright you seem distant

Mihle: more than fine baby .

I have something for you .

I smiled

Me: I have something for you too.

I took out a white Tee with a black tiger it's his favourite animal.

Mihle: it's Sooo cool thanks baby.

He kissed my cheek repeatedly.

Mihle: so cool I always wanted it how'd you get it.

Me: I have my ways

Mihle: ahhh for you I have a necklace .

She gasped I'm suprise. I put the necklace on her neck perfect

Mihle: don't take it off where ever what ever happens even if you're mad at me babe don't take it off.

Me: I won't . I love it why would I

I kissed his cheek repeatedly too . He then kissed my lips a short brief kiss.

We packed to go back I feel watched. Maybe it's paranoia .

—

Holiday season - day of closing

-

I was packing to go home when I heard a knock

Luya what does he want

Me: yes

Luya: Thapelo was asking if you will need a lift home.

Me: Come on . I know we eat dinner together but I don't know him that much . They both stay here. The new comers , they never speak to me thou unless they have too like. Pass me the salt. And good news they rented another room to make it a kitchen so I use it and since the cooking now is too much Siphon and Luya compensate me for the work . R200 a week

My phone rang

Me: babe

Mihle: do you miss your dad?

Me: what makes you ask that ?

Mihle: I think your aunt's place would do I mean you haven't been there in like forever and babe think about it's Johannesburg

Me: yeah but mom .

Mihle: you can always call her.

Me: what's up I know something is up Mihle just tell me!!

The line went silent.

Mihle: it's just I also wanted to spend sometime with you also you see. And...and

Me: Ahh my baby it's okay I'll do so anyways I miss my aunt .

Mihle: it's a yes ?

Me: yeah but after two weeks I will head home

Mihle: that's great to hear Ummm I'll see you there neh. I love you .

Me: I love you too

Call dropped

Luyanda: so ?

Me: the lift? Is he trustworthy? I should call my baby on this one

—

Me: baby there's some creepy guy who wants to give me a lift

Mihle: creepy wh- what's his name?

Me: Thapelo just imagine even the name.

Mihle:Ohhh hes harmless that's my boy . He'll drop you there don't worry.

—

At least I was at ease I looked I Luya having that I told you face .

Me: get out

—

All the way to Joburg this person's been quite only asking if I'm hungry. Or if I want some snacks , do I want to pee. I tried talking

Me: Soo you have a girlfriend ?

He looked me by the corner of his eye maintaining a straight line on his lips. His lips are dark dark and even his completion is more like Indian Indian he had long hair that he braided thou that's the part I hate.

He didn't answer

Me: I guess no , so where you from ?

Thapelo: everywhere .

Me: what do you mean "everywhere" ?

I asked putting quotations in the air.

He looked me with a corner of his eye.

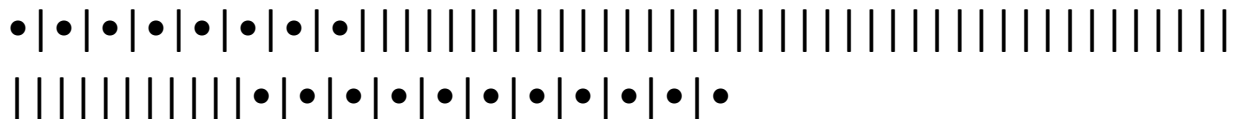
Thapelo: want some food?

Me: are you ...gay?

He sighed

Thapelo : you must be on your periods

He stopped the car in some garage . He's such pain in the ass .
Pietermaritzburg . Yhoo still a long way to go.



Holidays were great , good it's been nice from place to place .
And now I was back from school . But currently in Mihles place
,we were busy singing

Bang bang - Nicki Minaj feat Ariana Grande

Both: she might let you hold her hand to school but Imma show
you how to graduate . Talk talk gjkk (we don't know what goes
next)

B to the A to N to the G ,hey see any body can to good to you
you need a bad girl to blow your mind .

Mihle: babe

Me: yeah

Mihle: can you move in with me?!

Me: wow I mean ... Wow yes of course

I was so happy

Mihle: thank you

He pecked my lips and continue chopping the veggies. I was so happy guys.

A song I liked played

—

Hey

Advertisement

I was doing just fine before I met you

I drink too much and that's an issue

But I'm OK

Hey, you tell your friends it was nice to meet them

But I hope I never see them

Again

I know it breaks your heart

Moved to the city in a broke-down car

And four years, no calls

Now you're looking pretty in a hotel bar

And I, I, I, I, I can't stop

No, I, I, I, I, I can't stop

So, baby, pull me closer

In the back seat of your Rover

That I know you can't afford

Bite that tattoo on your shoulder

Pull the sheets right off the corner

Of that mattress that you stole

From your roommate back in Boulder

We ain't ever getting older

Closer – chainsmokers

35

Sunday

I spend the weekend at his place and surprisingly we actually went to church . I had clothes I bought over for Saturday so I am gonna move in today. Wait what will mom say ? Nahh she won't find out coz I won't tell her .

We came back from church to an amazing Aroma . Who cooked ? And M.mom in the kitchen cooking . Unheard off but things change moss. But all of a sudden.

Mihle: smells nice , who are you cooking for ?

Me.mom: you guys

She said with a smile .

Me: oh

M.mom: go get fresher up so you can all eat .

She said friendly

We were so confused so as she said we walked upstairs

Me: you have any idea what changed

Mihle: same as you I'm also lost

He strung .

—

We took an innocent shower . Then lotioned I wore clothes
from yesterday

Mihle: you can just wear these

He gave me a big T-shirt and boxers and sleepers

Me: thanks

He wore grey sweat pants and grey hoodie .

—

We walked down stairs to the table and wow the table already set and all. She pulled a chair for us.

Wow

And served us ncohhhh

Mihle: if I may ask , what changed

She was now at the table.

Her: umm first I would like to apologize to Pretty , the way I treated you wasn't fair and I am deeply sorry for that . So this is a way to show my apologies .

Me: me.

Um it's fine I forgive you

Her: thank you my child . Now let's eat.

She looked at me with a smile

Or

Smirk

I glanced at her twice and took my spoon I sipped some food in the spoon and raises the spoon.

I suddenly drooped it .

Me : can you take one spoon and taste your own food

I said firmly .

Her: what ? Wait what ?!

Me: taste your own food !!

M.mihle: I won't do that

Mihle: what are you trying to insinuate Pretty?!

He seemed slightly angry.

Mihle: mom is not capable of poisoning people .

Me: whose side are you on

Mihle: your side but I mean she would not do that

Me: then you taste the food.

Mihle: I already did babe , see I am eating . Stop this please

You can even taste mine

Her: okay Petty I a-

Me: Pretty

Her: Pretty

She took a spoon with food on her mouth and chewed up ,
swallowed.

Mihle: see

He looked at me angry

Me: I wanted to be sure

And now I feel bad but it was for my own safety. But clearly blood is thicker than water.

—

Mihle dropped me off at the flats for some of my staff just clothes . I will still continue renting this flat in case I need it. I already called Bonke to help me with some stuff so I was was waiting for her now. To think Mihle didn't even give me a goodbye kiss. Is he for real ?

—

I recieved a phone call

Bonke: I'm at the gate

Me: come in kalok

Bonke: these guys are staring , there's too many people's eyes
apha .

Me: mnk ! I'm coming

I walked out yeah indeed . Thapelo Thami

Advertisement

Luyanda and 3 more were chilling out side . Thapelo was
leaning against the wall playing with a matchstick on his mouth.
Pencil over the ear ,talk about being lame.Thami sitting on the
chair as well as the other guys . Luya sitting at the steps as
always.

—

I walked to Bonke . This girl is on fire !!!

Short shorts, crop tee, leather jacket , loose pony tail. And the occasion ?

Me: and?

I asked referring to her outfit .

Bonke : shut up

Me: hay la girlllll

—

We walked . Just imagine guys . I still wearing the big Tee Mihle gave me and boxers and flip flops . And we are walking together yhoo hay JOKE

The guys all eyes on her but what caught was Luyas stare. He looked at her like it was the first time looking at her. Awestruck . His eyes suddenly went soft and more like sleepy . Mouth open . Gazing at her. Slava involuntary came out .

Me: Luya !earth to Luya

Is he checking my friend out.

Me: she's taken

She looked at Luya with eyes full of pity I guess but cute

Bonke: just ... leave him owk . .

Me: but friend this womanaser was busy staring at your ass and you want me to shut up . No friend I won't let that happen

Luya: Pretty what's your problem with me you know I don't know what to do to show how much sorry I am and if you ...

Me: What?!

Bonke: Pretty stop

Luya eyes landed on Bonke and she did she just give him a little smile a little blush . And Luya smiled slightly too .

We walked to my room . I heard people laughing .I don't care.

Me: girl that's my ex .

Bonke: ok I know

I gave her those eyes

Me:so

Bonke: so what ? I have a man . Girl I'd never do that to you ok .

She helped me pack she was in a mood. The way she was
Humming

Me: what's up

Bonke: nothing

Me: owwwwk

When finished I called Mihle to come. While we walked outside

Only Luya was still outside .

He played with his hair . I could notice he was still staring at her
and it's not an ordinary stare it's like he was admiring . I mean I
don't care.

He caught me glancing at him.

Luya: so where you going ?

Me: I'm moving in with my boyfriend !

Luya: oh good luck you'll need it .

Me: thanks but I won't need yours .

Luya: owk.

1 minute later.

Luya: Yaz Pretty you'll come back right to me and when you do I'll be waiting for you with a warmest embrace I could ever give

.

I sighed

Me: really? Ahh that's cute to cute to be true even.

He breathes heavily . After 30 seconds he spits

Me: and now what?

He stands up and comes close my face and smirks . Then leans to my face . He sure does scare me now I could smell cigarette . He smokes I didn't know that. I feel suffocated I can't breathe . He breathes on my neck then whispered on my ear.

"You're being followed but you're just too naive to see it " then he walks towards his room , hands in the pocket whistling .

Me: by who?

Luya: asks your boyfriend .

He continued whistling. Right then I heard a hoota. Mihle .

Bonke: bye chommie .

Me: thanks Boo

Bonke : I'll text you about

She points Luyas room with her head.

On the other hand Mihle opens the boot .

He's still mad , he didn't even greet me oh okay well .

I got in the passenger seat.

Mihle: by the way you should get your learners licence
meanwhile I teach you to drive.

Me: owk

Im just waiting for the right moment to ask him about this thing
. Luya maybe lying . Who knows

36

"So you're still mad at me?" I asked Mihle looking outside the window of the car he was currently driving

Mihle: yes , yes I am Pretty . How do you think I feel when you out of all people think that my mom , my blood could poison you?!

Me: babe she H-A-T-E-S me and now she jus becomes nice how would I know if she does not want me dead so you can be with that Amanda girl.

He chuckled

Mihle: you're still on with that?

Me: yes I can't help but think of what you two were - you guys use the same room you and I use.

He sighs

Mihle: I would rather we stop talking. I watched the mirror review. There this car that's been turning every corner we take maybe they are going same route. Mihle speed up As soon as I got to our room. I threw myself on the bed. So tired .

Mihle wheeled my stuff in and started unpacking .

I stared at him taking out the clothes ,one by one and putting them in the hanger. Others folding them . He seemed calm , mouth in a thin line ,skin pale hair neatly combed back.

Me: so are there people Following me or you ?

He stopped in his tracks ,more like from astonishment. I'd like to know why that is so .

Mihle: and where did you hear that type of thing ?

Me: so it's true?

He turned to face me and breathes out ,hands in the waist.

Mihle: no it's not true

I stared at him

He stared back.

Okay he's telling the truth .

Me: ok

He let out a sigh

Me: are you ok?

Mihle : yes

Me: still mad ?

Mihle: yes

Me: Argh babe I am sorry then I am so sorry I didn't think it would hurt you like that.

I stood up and went to him and tip toed to peck his lips . He just stood still . Is he for reals now?

Me: please forgive me

I made puppy face

Then put my arms over his arms.

Me: please

I kissed him he then responded and pushed me on the bed
kissing me hungrily . T-shirts flying in the air

...and the rest is history

—

What's that noise I woke up , took a gown and went down the
corridor are there people doing the deed here? His mom is sure
way too old for that . Do they have to moan so loud.I looked
through the key place in the door Gosh

I opened the door . Amanda and Mihle what is she...and as for
Mihle I thought

Mihle: it's not what you think I can explain.

You know what I am done . I am done with him . I told myself
that if he ever flops again I am leaving for good and yena he
does this

He does this

I bust out to tears yhuu I went back to my room / our room. I c-

"Babe wake up "

"Babe ?!"

I opened my eyes . He's right next to me .

Mihle: you were crying ?

Me: I was?

Oh yeah I should be coz I dreamt you cheating on me .

-

I woke up and took gown going downstairs . I made porridge

Mihle PoV

-

Gosh I don't know what to do . If it's just a dream then it's a dream I have nothing to do with that.

I made the bed then took out our uniforms ironing them .

Pretty walked in with porridge .

Me: thanks

Pretty: pleasure

Me: baby are you seriously gonna be mad at me coz , coz what ? Huh...just because you had a dream of me cheating

I noticed the necklace is no more .

Me: where is your necklace?

Her: I don't need it

Advertisement

in fact I am moving out .

Me: Ok and I am more than willing to help you.

•

Yhu she just cried ,I was kidding me

Mihle: babe , babe wam .

I tried hugging but she yacked me off and went off I don't know where , she'll come around . Hay this dream of hers .I think I

also need some body guards here coz now she lives with me, Thapelo and Thami who were her body guards aren't here in this house . And also Luyanda was keeping a good eye on her.

I made a few phone calls and got 4 body guards . Thank goodness and where is she now?

I ran myself a bath. And took the longest time I need to de stress like seriously coz wow.

I wore my uniform and went down stairs wondering where she is.

I thought I'd find her in the kitchen but haibo

I looked outside

Nothingi started panicking and her necklace is off . Damn .

Ummm ummmm so now I just have to look for her

I opened the garage only to find her ushering Thapelo in the gate

And

Mihle: Wena what do you think you are doing ? That's my woman

Thapelo put his hands on surrender .

Thapelo : met her down the street "taking a walk " and worse she knows her life is in danger

Pretty PoV

Okay this now adds up the Lambo at school. The car I thought was following yesterday ,the same car that passed me right after I started my walk and slowed down even stopped but ke

Thapelo was jogging by so it went off and he doesn't tell me .
OK . And now Thapelo says this. Luyanda warned me also and
he chose to lie .

—

I walked inside then went to take a shower. I heard the door
open.

Mihle: babe can we talk about it?

Me: Get out .

I was fuming you know when you're furious.

He thinks I am a fool . You know what I don't care about him so
I'm am leaving today .

I walked out of the bathroom and got ready for school .

When I walked down stairs . Amanda what is she doing here talking with Mihle more like flirting with my man . Who does she think she is?

Me: hey Mihle Mthethwa . I see you .what are you doing with her?

Mihle: oh she was ...ah I was used to be driving driving her to school

Then he stretched his neck .

Me: behind my back

Mihle: nothing happened babe I promise

—

Okay okay I am being tested . I will test them also .

Me: ok

I smile

I walk to the garage and found a fork spade no a Harmer will do good . I took it then started beating his car screen I bit it to pieces the the doors and body

"no no no no no no no!!!!!"

He just walked in and saw this . I am so proud of myself self coz the way he is so mad is the same as mine .

Me: what baby

I asked pouring paint all over the car.

Mihle: stop stop stop

He dragged my arm and threw the paint down.

Mihle: I told her to leave. She's gone ,GONE baby

Me: why didn't you tell me?

Both things Mihle Austin

Why ?

Mihle: I knew you would be mad but this Pretty is a car worth money ,can you fix this?

Me: question is can you fix my broken heart ?

Tears steamed down my ballon cheeks .

Me: this heart that's been hurt by you several times .

Mihle: I am so sorry babe

Me: I am not your baby . I am done for good.

Mihle: necklace ? Put it on . Please .

Me: it's in my pocket might as well threw it.

Mihle : okay babe time is not on our side can we go?

Me: I'll catch taxi right now

Mihle: you can't go wondering alone in the street now you know

Me: so

Mihle: they'll capture you and torture I can't bare that and I would not forgive myself.

Me: one of those Shaddy business of yours they get me in danger too.

Yaz I hate you man . I hate hate you

•

I walked. If the want me they can have me I am already finished moss .

Yaz mihle can play with ones heart dude he'd play you and play you . Yho I am done .

Just when I walked out the gate a taxi pulled out . Mihle just got our clearly he's been running after me. I closed the taxi door.

Then it started moving ,I took out the necklace and stared at him . The day I got it , it was so sweet. I hate him . I don't want anything to do with him so I threw the necklace outside the

window . That's when I noticed we ain't going to school where
are we going .

Me: driver

Me: driver

Oh he's on the phone but kalok

Me: driver

Driver: (on the phone) all in one piece. ...at last .

37

I screamed my lungs out , where is this person taking out of the blue some kind of gas filled the room. I lost my subconscious.

Cold liquid ran down my body . What do they want ? I scanned at them . They seem scary . There were two man in the room and I am praying whatever happens that I don't get raped.

Guy1 to guy2: tell bozz she's awake.

Minutes later a buff guy came in .

Bozz: and here is Zades little Puppy .

Puppy ?

Me: I am not a puppy.

Bozz: and she's got some mouth too

Me: can you frikin tell me why I am here.

He laughed

Bozz: your big puppy didn't tell you .

Me: just talk what do you want from me?!!

—

Gosh I have a liver but I had to know .

He kept quiet. I screamed

Me: help , help !!!

I tried moving myself from ropes around me by obviously failed

.

He laughed again.

Bozz: no one hears you .

It's a sound proof room .

And you(referring to one of the guys) you haven't taken that body as I told you to do so .

One guy went to a wardrobe and opened it ,two dead bodies fell . I gasped and looked the other way .

Bozz smiled .

Bozz: the same will happen to you if your little Puppy doesn't bring back my 20 Million .

His phone rang

He showed me the caller - Zade

Bozz: hello ,what pleasure do I owe you? ... She's right here next to me . . .

He gave me the phone

Mihle: babe hold on I will make a plan .

Me: mihle please do something , jus give the guy his money please .

Mihle: I promise I wi-

Phone snatched .

Bozz: you have 12 hours . After that she's dead .

I looked at my surroundings. One window and very far but wardrobe . Can't believe they kill people and put them there.

-

Mihles pov

-

I remembered something

Flashback

Me: babe don't cry kalok , I don't get what's there to cry about .

She covered her face and ran to the room for tissue caba she hit the corner of the door the plung part on her teeth

She bust crying

Me: babe kalok these people are back together moss ngok so -

I said that walking to me and I was shocked to see what I was seeing . Tooth almost out

-

We went to doctors and I bribed one doctor to put a tracker on her last teeth that got filled out.

-

Bandages on her neck and cheek with her teeth already taken out and filled with some fake something I don't know at least I don't have to stay in this hospital . It's a private one thou .

And now I'll use just that tracker

I've been in this room for what feels like years . Where is Mihle Mthethwa

Advertisement

I will surely die here moss. The guys were watching me like a vulture waiting for it prey .

Me: what are you looking at ? Look somewhere else I don't want to be stared by zombies .

Guy1: what did she say?

Guy2: she needs to be taught lesson .

He slapped my face

Guy1: no I'll teach her a proper lesson .

He loses his belt . What's he doing , what is he fucking doing ?
And he bit me with it repeatedly . This is too bad for my liking .
They threw punches at me in the stomach worse .

The bozz got in .

Our eyes locked , anyone can get lost in those light blue eyes .

Bozz: leave her alone . I don't want her dead .

He gazed at my eyes , I kept the contact. Then he licked his lips .

Bozz: yet

Guy1:it's 3 hours left sir I don't think This Mihle guy will make it

.

Bozz : well see about that . But don't touch her , leave her alone . Have I made myself clear .

—

Yerrrrr saamoyiki (so afraid)

I don't know when I dozed off but I could sense someone was in front of me . When I opened my eyes . The bozz staring at me . He was even sitting in the chair . He smirked when I opened my eyes .

Bozz: nice sleep ? Huh Pretty ?

He smiled

I spit in his face . He averted and gave a stare .

Guy1: want me to do something sir .

Bozz: get out , all of you , out !!! Now!!!

They rushed out . I am in big trouble .

He looked at his clock .

Bozz: less than one hour left

My heart beating fast . He untied me . I heard the door being locked .

Bozz: mmh what have I got here?

Mihle PoV

Luya: finally

I was panicking . Walking up and down when he said that I stride straight to the computer .

Luya: East London . Mdantsane .

Mihle : I am going to drive there .

Luya: in 30 minutes ? There's still Qumbu ,Mthatha to pass and you tell me you can get there in 30 minutes .

—

I rubbed edges of my head

Me: I get your point

38

Me: yeah ... 10 million ...you got that kind of money ?

Luya: hurry up man

I ignored him , he can see moss that I'm busy on the phone .

Me: I get that you don't have that kind of money...it's cool I'll make a plan.

Luya: and ?

Me: I don't have the money bro . Who got money like that laying around.

Jaden , Jason and Grandma , I've tried everything in my power .

Luya: but you have not tried using your dad's money .

I ran a hand through my hair frustrated.

I can't , I don't want to .

Me: you get that once I use that money then I have no other choice but do as dad said in the will ,which is marry Amanda and I so don't want to .

I looked through the window.

Luya: I can borrow you 5 million .

Me: thanks body . I really appreciate it . So let's get to it , right now I have -

Luya: 15 minutes left make it quick.

Mihle: I am trying don't make this any harder on me !!

Me: make the transaction then . I'll also add the R200 000 I have on my account.

Luya: that's what you got?

Me: yeah

Luya: so we got 5 200 000

10 minutes left

Me: I gotta make a call shut up

I called Jaden and Jason .

Jason : we're here . Look there's a private jet that is on the way so get ready . Can't talk right now . We'll call once we got her .

Call dropped

Me: there's hope . Send the money .

Indeed the jet arrived . I and Luya got in and in a few we'll be there.

Pretty PoV

Once the door locked all became silent . He smiled and stared at me with eyes full of lust.

Bozz: what have I got here?

He walked up to me and untied me . Then he lifted his shirt a little , Calvin underwear appeared with a good looking torso what shocked me the most is the gun he had . I froze .

Bozz: you scream . You are dead . You try anything stupid you die. Clear ?

I was so scared . Is he for real? His eyes were red probably from anger. He unbuttoned my top . Mmmh no no no he ain't doing that to me . I kicked his balls

Advertisement

he fell down . I ran to the door and banged it banged it banged it banged it .

Me: somebody help !!!!!!!!! Help !!!!!!!!! Help .

I went to the window and tried climbing . There's no bagles yess . I opened the window . Whoa is this a building I am in coz it's way too far if I jump . I looked at my back . Unexpected he pulled my leg and I fell down

Him: what do you think you're doing ?

He pinned me on the floor and pointed the gun right on my face . I tried moving , loosing up

Him: one mistake , you're dead .

I was now crying full of hate .

Me: kill me if you have to kill me .

He stripped me naked . I tried moving but he was overpowering me . His phone keeps ringing . He roughly kisses. Then opens up his belt ,opens zip . Gosh I am wearing nothing I am so nervous . I have to fight for myself .

Suddenly gunshots !! Did you hear that . Another gunshot , then I hear a plane or helicopter or something like that .

Phone keeps ringing . Door is banging hard . Is this person trying to brake the door. Then it indeed broke down . Jason . Oh thank you thank you thank you. He shot Bozz in the back ,in the spinal cord exactly. I took the shirt and just put it around my body and ran to the door .

Jason : hurry up we have no time .

A bullets flew right in front of me at the passage .

Jason : get down !!

Did as told . Bullets flew in the air . We went by the kitchen counter . Then when he was about to shot again . Bullet through his knee .

Jason: ouch !!!

A lot of blood pumping out .

Jason :(he said in pain) see that window right there . We're going through that

Me: you're bleeding we should do something about that.

I took off his t-shirt and bandaged the wound .

Bullet flew over our heads to the window, Blaaaaa glass pieces fell all over the place . I took the gun . I can do this . The person is walking here in the kitchen and I can see his feet so I shot two times on his thighs , he groaned and fell down .

Sounds of helicopter or plane oh a jet next to us someone I recognise as Luya waved. We used the window . It was kind of hard with Jason now unconscious .

Police sirens , who called the cops!

"Everybody freez!!! " The police called out . We were already in so the jet took off . Right when I walked in the jet Mihle gave me brief hug . Luya driving the jet.

Me: I need to attend Jason he's hurt .

Mihle: we already hired a doctor . Jaden did.

He ushered me to a place more like a bedroom. Its decent. I sat on the bed with the event still playing on mind . He sat next to me and pat my back taking my head to rest on his chest .

Mihle: I am glad you're back .

He kissed my forehead .

Mihle: you should freshn up so I'll ran a bath for you .

Me: thanks I would love that.

—

After 30 minutes . I was dressed in the T shirt he was wearing leaving him with military shorts . He picked me up bridal style and tucked me on the bed sitting by my side .

Mihle: how are you feeling ?

Me: I don't know

I stared at him . I love him . I love him with my all and yhoos I don't know who I would be without him .

Two days later

I woke up next to a snoring Mihle . I hit him with a pillow , he shifted and stopped snoring . Better . I stepped on the floor and reaching for my sleepers once I did I opened the curtains taking my gown .

"Rhoooooo" here we go again . I walked down stairs to cook for everyone Porridge. I haven't slept properly so I thought I should do something useful.

.

.

Mealie meal . Water . I mixed those together and boiled water on the other side. Pour the boiled water in the pot same as mealie meal then someone put his hands on my waist when I looked to protest . Mihle . He's up .

Mihle: morning princess

Me: hello Prince m

Mihle: you know you should not do this. Overworking yourself I mean would have done it .

Me: but I did it .

I need to stir this up .

Mihle: let me give it a try .

He stired .

Mihle: ain't that hard .

After some minutes he closed the pot so it can simmer .

Mihle: now that we are done here , let's

He kissed my neck . I shifted . I kind of feel uncomfortable. For the past few days we haven't been intimate coz of what happened back there.

He put me the counter and started kissing me roughly , hungrily full of lust and passionate.

He gently opened my gown robe.

"Bozz: you scream . You are dead . You try anything stupid you die. Clear ?

I was so scared . Is he for real? His eyes were red probably from anger. He unbuttoned my top . Mmmh no no no he ain't doing that to me . I kicked his balls , he fell down . I ran to the door and banged it banged it banged it banged it . "

I pulled out .

Me: sorry

Advertisement

I can't I just can't.

And Mihle ran his hand on his hair.

Mihle: baby look at me . Breath and maybe we can try again. I miss you .

He kissed my cheek

I fake smiled .

"Get a room " Jaden standing at the door .

Mihle chuckled ,

Mihle: with pleasure .

Me: umm I still wanna dish up for everyone Porridge is almost ready.

Mihle: oh (disappointed) okay

—

Everyone sitting in the table. Porridge dished out .

Jason's leg is getting better . Luya went back to the flats .
M.mom on the table .

M.mom: nice Porridge girl where did you learn this?

Me: um I don't really know

M.mom: you should teach me sometime.

Mihle:I would love to help coz I know exactly how to do this

Me: right ?

Mihle: yeah babe what I stirring.

The table laughed.

M.mom: so I was thinking of going to town today.

Jaden: me too

—

For the past two days I've not been feeling well so I thought I should go to chemist for check ups you know . I've been dizzy and my boobs are getting swollen but they are small so no biggie . I guess I'm just another sleepy head I the house . Yho

guys yesterday I slept 16 hours just imagine. But what worries me the most is the constipation and bloated stomach and headaches , frequently urinating.

I arrived at clinic and went to consultation . They took tests and gave me results.

High blood , cool.

Natalia, cool

Pregnancy test: pregnant !!!

Doctor: congratulations. You are 3 months pregnant and you're gonna be a parent.

Awestruck yho so not ready.

Doctor: but your baby may have consequences I suggest you abort coz you keep him he might be disabled but definitely some problem

40

I was now crying full of hate .

Me: kill me if you have to kill me .

He stripped me naked . I tried moving but he was overpowering me . His phone keeps ringing . He roughly kisses. Then opens up his belt ,opens zip . Gosh I am wearing nothing I am so nervous .

"Babe, babe, wake up!"

I opened my eyes

"Are you okay ?"

I nodded wiping the tears that I just noticed .

Me: I'm fine.

Mihle: no you're not ,what was your dream about ?

Me: I said I am FINE OKAY!!

I snapped .

"Dinner is ready !" That was M.mom. After the little trip I had to town I took a nap and it's only now wake up . No one was around at that time thou. M.mom was went on doing her make up and the brothers I don't really know .

Mihle: I bring you your food okay.

Me: I said I am FINE.

He sighed in defeat .

I took my gown

Advertisement

the way I was angry I don't even know why I am angry.

Mihle: is this still about the dream .

Me: just leave me alone Mthethwa would you ... please .

Tears escaped my eyes .

Mihle: now you're not okay I now know . What's up ?

I furiously wiped my tears and quickly went to the kitchen leaving there . Later on he walked in and took a seat opposite to me .

Jason looked at Jaden and then Jaden strung .

M.mom: let's pray

God bless our food before we eat amen .

Us: Amen

We started eating

Mmmh this is good . Delicious food . Mmmmm

Jaden: so today we are leaving .

Me: that was unexpected .

Jason: we can't stay here forever you know . But we're just one call away remember . If y'all need anything Sister in law . You're always welcome.

Me: ahhh thanks

—

We bid them goodbye again . They hooted I waved with the biggest smile on my face .

Me: I'm gonna miss them thou .

Mihle: me too .

Me: I have to wash dishes , see y'all

I said walking to the front door.

M.mom: leave them my dear . Your job is to make sure that Mhle is alright and we'll taken care off . Oh and I have put his prescribed tablets on the drawer . The first drawer from the left

.

Me: thank you ma .

I put my arms on Mihles waist .

He sighed

Mihle: you confuse me Yaz . You were mad just now next minute you're all happy.

Me: so?

Mihle: that's not normal

—

Is it maybe the mood swings of pregnancy. Thinking about that makes me cringe . How do I tell him that the baby I am expecting is going to be disabled . How will I even start

Sbwl to cry .

Me: I'm okay

I said after a few seconds of thinking.

Mihle: and now your voice is shakey like you want to cry . I know something is wrong and you're going to t- his phone rang

—

Mihles pov

—

My wife to be has been acting strange recently . I literally don't know what is wrong with her . Like what exactly is wrong with her .

My phone disturbed me from my speech and I had to take it .private no?

Me: your airtime is exhausted to make a call please load airtime
. Tuu. Tuu. Tu-

Caller: I know it's you Zade . Just wanted to you know that you won't get away with this . You can't put me in a wheelchair not pay my money and yet get away away with it . I'm coming for you . I'm going to kill your family members piece by piece. Your Ntlahla , already have her captured . I'm shot with that bastard that shot me and oh how can I forget that missy of yours . She's feisty and I like her . I am thinking of keeping her .

Me: you son of a b@#\$* don't you dare . Shit. Fuck !!!!!

I threw the phone on the floor .

I started taking everything down , glasses on the floor. I could here someone whipping. Then someone grabbed my arm

Pretty PoV

—

I recieved a hot punch on my breasts . Ouch !!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

I screamed in agony .

He turned to me and looked in sympathy .

Mihle: I'm sorry I didn't mean too

-

I want to tell him I am pregnant but how when he's in this state
?

-

Mihle: are you okay ?

He tried lifting me up .

Me: you should drink your pills .

Mihle: no I am FINE . I am tired of drinking those things . Sick and tired !

I need to make a call , Ntlahla has been captured. That's Mihles step sister moss

Me: what?!!

41

While Mihle went out to make the call . I got up and took sleeping pills . I don't think he'll be able to do anything at this state so I also took the pills that were shown to me and went to the kitchen . Made them in pieces then took a soft drink and pour it for us .

I took both glasses and went to the study to give him .

"I'm coming there as in now " I put the drink on the table in front of him , he takes it without thanking then drinks it furiously.

I smile and took a sip from mine while I also go and make a *Call* too.

Conversation over phone

Jaden: hey I can't talk now c-

Me: it's about Mihle ,I don't think he'll be able to make it today but I can surely get you guys all the help that you need.

Jaden: what happened ? Is he alright?

Me: yea yea but we're starting with September exams tomorrow Sooo ...

Jaden : oh oo- Kay

Me: is there anything I can help with .

Jaden: umm yeah actually . This needed him to be here hence he is the only one who can do it . Which is to talk with Ghost . We don't know why this person is on his tail so much .

Me: didn't he tell you?

Jaden: Nah he's story ain't making no sense . Talk to him for me or you can get Luyanda for me .

Me: cool will do. .

I immediately called Luya

Not picked up

I called again

Not picked

I called again

Not picked

I call again

Finally ,the line went silent .

"Sweetheart jus leave it , I need you here" that's a girls voice in the background. More like Bonke but Nah I'm being paranoid or Something.

Luya: talk

Me: Jaden kinda needs you so can you please contact with him coz the got Ntlahla captured.

Luya: why don't you talk to your boyfriend and leave me the fuck alone .

Line dropped .

Mihle walks in looking drowsy as F.

Mihle: I don't know what is happening with me Yaz I feel like sleeping.

He throws himself on the bed I think he sleeps.

I try to get him inside the bed and make sure he's tucked in properly.

I call Jaden again

Me: Luya is giving me trouble and Mihle is kinda drunk .

Jaden: doesn't matter now I just talked to him now and got hold of the information thank you though.

Me: alright

I myself sleep beside the now snoring Mihle.

—

I wake up early and go cook Porridge ,when I'm at the kitchen I find M.mom already making breakfast.

Me: morning

M.mom: oh hey morning mntanami

How are you?

Me: I am good .

M.mom: ohh how did you sleep kodwa ?

Me: good .

I say opening the Tap to drink some water.

M.mom: mmh that's good to hear.

I fill in the Jag with water so I can cook Porridge.

M.mom: what are you doing?

Me:sorry ?

M.mom: what are you doing??

Me: boiling water for porridge.

M.mom: Ohhh I was already making breakfast .

Me: oh

M.mom: yeah

Me: I thought maybe adding porridge would be great and add to the whole breakfast thingie of yours.

I say with confidence.

M.mom: okay do it then but can you show me too how you do this thing of yours.

Me: watch me .

I mix water with mealie meal

She stirs

M.mom : not as hard as I thought mmmh

We share a laugh right then Mihle decides to arrive.

Mihle: family , morning.

He sits down ,he seems fine .

Us: morning

Mihle: can you share the joke .

Me: no .

Mihle: so unfair

He sulked

Advertisement

we laughed again.

—

It my first paper today I reminded myself holding a pen ,
looking at the clock . It 09:00 now

Teacher: you can start writing.

—

Right when I finish Mihle comes to me , we go with out even bidding farewell to my friends.

—

We arrive home . My feet are swollen I need to wash them then rub them . At the gate there are 3 securities and there's a newly installed alarm system.

-

Next week we're writing Geography so might as well start studying so I first go to the fridge and took some leftovers I don't even know who left them and ate on my way to the study.

I took out books and sat on the chair . Wow so comfortable .it's actually the chair Mihle Sits in . I put my feet on the table and opened the book

Where do I start with you Geo ?

I took a sip from my drink then the door opened.

Mihle: wow

Me: oh it's you .

Mihle: nyow nyis you

What did he just say , he walks close . I close my book and stare at him.

Mihle: put your smelly feet on the floor this is my office!! My study and you don't have a right to be in this room without my permission.

Me: oh

I was a bit hurt , when did he start speaking like that to me.

Mihle: and you ate my food!!!

I stand up to leave when I was about to pass him

Mihle: I am talking to so your gonna ignore me huh?!

Me:. Umm

I massaged my neck

Me: sorry I didn't mean to

Hot slap on my cheek.

I rubbed my face and look down .

Mihle: go make me some food and please clean this room up .
Coz wow your feet

He pinches his nose and exits

I go make him food and clean the room . It more like spring cleaning coz I was even moving furniture , my feet were killing me !! I was tired . By the time I was finished I sat on the sofa rubbing my feet. This pregnancy is killing me itself. By the time I give birth ,it's gonna be hard .

Mihle walked in .

Me: I'm done .

Mihle: where my food thou . You telling me you have not cooked , serious babe.

I feel pressured yhoos this is too much.

Me: no

I change the channel to MTV Base . No guidance was playing . I felt like dancing so I moved a little yhoo so tired

Mihle walked to the TV and switched it off.

Me: jeez babe . What are you doing?

Mihle: what are YOU doing?

Me: watching TV move and switch on the TV please.

Mihle: that's no way of talking to me , you live under my roaf so my roaf my rules . I rule you . You hear me!!

Me: why now thou are you seriously gonna treat me like that huh? Your mom can cook moss

Mihle: she's long gone . It's just you and me soooo babe it would be very lovely if you would cook for me .

I sigh and walk to the kitchen tjo my feet are killing me .

While I was chopping onions

Me: babe? Can you massage my feet ?

Mihle: you mean your smelly feet. No thank you

I laugh coz I know he's probably joking

Me: are you being for reals please my baby.

Mihle: nope

Me: hookay

I cry low key if he asks it's the onions I'm chopping.

—

I dish up we eat in silence . Then head to bed . By the time I get on bed I am dead tired.

I just get in bed and try falling asleep.

I feel something touching me .

Mihle: babe

Me: I'm tired Mihle

Mihle: just a quickie .

Me: I am not ready Mihle

He turns me to him .

Him: please babe

Me: Mihle I said no .

He kisses me . I don't respond.

Me: I said no.

He continues

Mihle: you like it ? I know you do

He roughly kisses me . I smell mint with chocolate on his mouth
.

I don't want to do this . I try to remove him but he's way too
strong for me .

Me: stop

My eyes filled with tears .

He kisses my neck then boobs and stomach...

I know some people may enjoy this but I ain't enjoying it one bit. I cry silently while he makes his way all over my body. Forcing himself to me. Pounding harder than ever before .

Chapter 41 continuation

"We are, we are, we are

L.A. on a Saturday night in the summer

Sundown and they all come out

Lamborghinis and their rented Hummers"

I put my hand under the pillow and answered the call without looking at the caller.

Me: hello

?:Mntase

Me: Kuhle?

Kuhle: yho umama undigxothile (mom kicked me out)

I sat up straight ,ouch my body hurts . I blinked ,I feel like my eyes have cement on them so I rubbed them. When I look in the mirror they are red and all puffy . Oh my face looks so bad . It's swollen.

•

Me: what ? What are you saying ?

Kuhle: ndigxothiwe(I've been kicked out)

Me: yhoo what happened ? Kanti wena ,what happened ?

Kuhle: please don't judge me .

Me: thetha(speak)

Kuhle: I am gay and she kinda caught me kissing my boyfriend.

Me: ahhh finally my big brother dates someone.

•

I know it sounds weird but Kuhle is in Third year at WSU but still my brother does and haven't had a girlfriend nor boyfriend in his lifetime. Weird I know which guy would do that ? Do people like that even exist. Try asking him that.

Kuhle: stop cheering for me and help me out please .

•

Me: okay Ummm try the Reverends house I'm sure they may help.

Kuhle: Rev ! No no and how will I explain it to them .

Me: Kuhle there's literally nothing to be ashamed of . As people we are different . We wouldn't all like the same gender . It's normal to be gay and as for me I will always see you as my brother . You feel me bro

Kuhle: yeah lil sis so Reverend house it is .

Me: be chilled

Advertisement

sukoyika (don't be afraid) you'll get through this . I'll try speaking to mom for you .

He sighed .

Me: Remember that I love you ne always and always and

Both: forever

I laughed

•

I send I blow kiss and giggled as he drops the call. That was kinda expected . Kuhle being gay it was kinda obvious.

"So you're cheating on me? "

Mihle was leaning on the door frame with his hands folded.

Me: no

Mihle: who are you telling that you love them ? Huh? do you think I am that stupid huh ?

He was kinda calm

I breathed out in fear.

Me: i.. I..it was my .. brother

Mihle : You're lying

He walked close to me and more like scan me .

Me: please do not do it please Mihle

Mihle : don't worry I won'tyet .

He walks out

-

I let out a sigh I feel like crying . I can't do this anymore. I don't feel safe here at all. He walks in with a shambok ,uyayqonda imvubu . Imvubu dude . Yhoo hayke . He took steps close to me and he lifted it till it reaches his back and forth till it reaches my skin . When he takes it off I can feel my skin burning ingathi siyaxwantsuka(more like skin is removing) .Red huge mark appeared on my skin uyqonda moss ndimhlophe (since I'm white/ yellow bone) just imagine. Again does the same thing . I was not even crying just enduring the pain . When he's done .

-

-

Mihle: now take off that dress

I can't even move my arm.

Blood stains on the shirts ingathi bekuxelwa (it's like something was slaughtered). I now have started crying silently .

Mihle: take off that dress I wanna do some work on you .

Me: ..I ..can.. not move .

He does it for me and takes my dress off by force .

-
-

I want to tell him I am pregnant but how .

A little bump I think is starting to show but I don't think he even notices . And so he tires my arms on the sides of the bed .

Mihle: you got stretch marks , I thought you had a beautiful body but turns out it's a grannies body after all.

-
-

I let him make his way to me again. I no longer protest.

Worse than yesterday .

Once he's done he tries cleaning me up with first aid kits coz I was kinda of bleeding.

I was suppose to write paper 3 today but I didn't because I couldn't.

Being locked here 24/7 is hectic.

—

Three days later

—

Mihle walks in , I feel much better coz he stopped beating me since I was not on good state . He seemed calm futhi . I was in the kitchen cooking when he held my waist and breathes on my neck sending chills down my spine and the air was suddenly filled with a feeling of fear and frightening . What is he gonna do .

Mihle: how is my baby doing .

Me: fine

I say afraid of what he may say .

He turned me to him and gave me a soft peck on my lips .

Then shows me red roses . That's cute

Mihle: for you .

I smile and my heart melts . Ahh that's so sweet . I take them smelling them . They are so fresh.

Me: thank you Mihle

Mihle: I'm your babe

Im not sure whether I should smile or what .

Mihle: right?

Forehead against forehead . Breathing the same air . I am so afraid of what may happen next .

Me: yeah babe

Mihle: you seem tense .

Me: no no no I am fine .

I smile and say "I love you."

Mihle: I love you too baby .

So since that day Mihle decided that it's not good if I have a phone so I don't own one currently .

Mihle: I'd like to take you out .

Suprised

Me: ohh okay ...then wow

That would be lovely.

Mihle: I think I should make it up to you . I haven't been the best boyfriend the couple of days and I'd like it if you can forgive me . I gonna change babe from today on wards. I ain't I mean never gonna lay a hand on you okay .

Me: what makes you think that I believe that .

Mihle: coz I am willing to change. For you babe .

I stare at him

Mihle: I am! don't give me that look. The thing is you push me babe . You push me to do it and I end up losing it . It's your fault that I beat you up it's your fault.

-
-

I wanted to cry . My fault. It's my fault!! My freaking fault he beats me up .

-
-

Me: I agree with you and I am sorry.

Mihle: see I told you so . Let's go take a shower together .

Me: no I'll take the bath.

Mihle: but baby I wanted to you know .

He kisses my cheek. I stand cold .

Mihle: okay let me go shower. Alone. With no one.

•

He walks upstairs . While I think of a plan to escape. Later on I follow and a set of make up is on the bed . Brand new . He comes out with a towel only dripping wet

Me: and this ?

Mihle: to cover up your scars .

Me: oh okay .

I see he put his phone on the dresser . I should try to get it so I can call someone .

—

I am wearing a bare back silver shiny dress and my hair is in a neat bun . And we went out to some restaurant I don't know.

•

Mihle: you like the food?

Me: yeah it's good . I like it .

Mihle: it's Chinese food actually

Yea yea I figured that out coz we were eating with those things that look like sticks.

Me: babe

Mihle: yes

Me: if I would get pregnant what would you say?

Mihle: are you trying to say you are pregnant?

Me: what would you say?

Mihle: ummmmm well I be more than happy to have your child.

Me: well then I am pregnant

He chocked

Mihle: what?! How long

Me: three months . But my foetus doesn't grow like other kids like it's slow and our son or daughter will be disabled .

-
-

I breath out bravely and search for a response but there are no emotions .

Mihle: okay .

The rest of the night is awkward then he ask me for a dance , I dance with him . My arms on his shoulders . His hands on my waist .

I started kissing him . He responds before the kiss heats up ,he pulls my hand to the girls bathroom . We get in some toilet and damnnnnn I kiss him passionately my hand traveling all over his body . I can feel that at this point he is powerless coz I am in control . I open his shirt buttons and rub his chest . I make love bites on his neck and he is groaning so freaking loud . I put my hand in his pants and squeezed his butt .

I take his pants off and now he is wearing nothing and start from the bottom to the top ☹️ not forgetting to search his pants for a phone I plant kisses on his skin and then suck *** y'all know . Got it . I got the phone . I slip it on my panty while continuing to do my job .

Me: babe let's go finish this off at home .

He agrees and we arrived home in less than 2 min as soon as the car stops he starts kissing me again carring bridal style and I ask to go to the bathroom . And so I put the phone on a my drawer for lotions and try look for contacts . Luya.

I call him he doesn't answer. Damn.

I call again

Answers

Me: it's me Pretty man I need your help.

Background: dude I tell you Bonke digs me

Me: hello

Background: I told you . So she's yours now

I can't believe Luya.

Background: dude can you shut up

Mihle: babe your coming or what !!

•

Imma do this another time while he's asleep. Calling someone else coz wow

I strip myself naked then catwalked to him .

Mihle: come to daddy

I giggled ...and the rest is history

42

I woke up in the middle of the night to make a call. Strong arms around my waist

I try to free myself .

"Where are you going?"

Me: I need to pee .

Mihle: okay don't take too long.

He let me go .

I go the bathroom and take the phone in the drawer.

8 misses calls

-

2 from Ghost

2 from The Hottie from club

3 from Barbie girl

1 from His mom

Oh okay.

I opened his WhatsApp messenger . Messages come flooding .

The Hottie from the club: You want some today . 😊

I've been waiting here in the hotel .

Where are you at ?

BAE!!! 😊😊

Barbie girl: Lover boy .

You promised . A promise is a promise

He replied: I'm coming tomorrow my chocolate . I'm all yours .

Same place same time . 😊😊 Can't wait 😊😊

I sigh

Mihle: babe please come back .

I feel like cry and I did just that .

I drop a soap inside the toilet so that it seems as if I'm doing no.

2

Me: my stomach ...(hick up) is upset

Mihle: are you crying?

Me: no ..(hick up) my stomach.

I feel constipated and bloated . I'll be fine .

A tear drops down on the floor coz I was sitting on the mat with my head between my thighs .

I dropped another soap in the toilet . And tried contacting Luya again.

Wrote a message

" Hey it's Pretty please help me . I beg you . Can you come over in Mihles house "

Sent

•

I then deleted the message so he doesn't see it.I can't believe Mihle is doing this to me . The door swings open. I look at him with my teary face and on his hand he had pills and medicine for constipation.

He looked at my hand that had his phone .

Mihle: is that my phone?

Me: you bastard !!! You bastard !!!

I hate you !! I hate you !!

You disgust me.

•

I click my tongue

And walk pass him throwing his phone on his face. To my surprise he didn't follow or talk back or anything like that . I'll spend the night in some other room I can't deal to face him . I need to call mom . But ke what will I say to her. She already has stress of Kuhle I don't wanna add to that . I get in the spare room and throw myself in the bed . Tommorow I'm not writing. As if I was gonna write.

—

I doze off .

—

Next day

—

I move my eyeballs I should be awake by now so I opened my eyes to find myself in the same position as yesterday.

I start recalling yesterday's events . I cry once more I can't believe he does this to me . I wanna leave . Today I am leaving .

I put my feet on the mat only to step on some red lace pant. I pick it up with my finger tips yuuuk aysanukiii ingathi ngumntu owabolayo (it's smelly like a dead person) I put it in the bin .

Guess what there is more in the bin and some condoms in there . I close my eyes . Tell me I am dreaming.

—

I walk to his room.

Me: morning.

He is still under cover with his hands over his hand leaning in the dashboard. More like thinking hard.

Mihle: morning

I opened my wardrobe and started taking out my clothes.

He cynically laughs

Mihle: ucinga uyaphi Na(where do you think you are going)

Me: I am moving out.

Mihle: neh we'll see about that

Me: we'll see .

I pack all my clothes .

I wheeled my suitcase out of his room to the lounge when I am at the Bulgar it's locked. I look for the key and it's right on the table . I gladly take it and open . It opens . I walk pass the passage then at the exit door . A machine talks

" Password"

Me: umm Mihle Mthethwa

"Wrong password "

Me: Pretty

"Wrong password"

"Your number of trails are finished ma'am . See you "

I bit the door in frustration then sat there and broke down.

Hours passed I'm so hungry . More hours passed .

Me: okay let me try again

"Your number of trails is finished ma'am . See you"

The Bulgar opens .

[In case yall confused so there is Bulgar for the lounge ne . Then after the Bulgar there passage which has the password door so one can exit yabo . Its recently built thou for security purposes]

Mihle: I am sure you're hungry . I made some food.

It's not like I have a choice.

Me: but I don't want food .

Mihle: my child needs it more that you .

He's got a point. I stand up and went in he pulled a chair for me . I sit . He can be such a gentleman sometimes . I'm so pleased that he hasn't laid a hand on me since I don't know when. I'm starting to believe on him changing .

But he cheated .

He dishes for me and shame he tried coz this is good.

Me: nice ...

He smiled . That million dollar smile of his.

Mihle: thanks babe.

Me: Mihle ... Those girls on your phone . You're cheating on me with them while I get beaten apha Wena you're busy with other girls .

Mihle: it wasn't my intentions they seduced me.

Me: you replied Mihle uphendule. Whamphendula !!

Mihle: babe please understand that I have needs .

Me: needs zantoni ndikhona (what needs while I'm here?)

Mihle: I knew you wouldn't understand.

Me: understand what?! Okay let's say I too had a man . Would you understand.

Mihle: I would yes I would understand.

Me: fuck you!!!!!!!!!!!! ... Yeva

I broke down and ran upstairs.

I sat at the edge of the bed crying. I wanna go home . I wanna go home 🤔🤔.

I started looking for anything that would be useful to me .

Mihle walks in .

Mihle: babe .

Me: don't baby me .

I opened a drawer and saw a gun .

Great I took it out . I so wanna kill him right now .

I point him aiming for his forehead

He put his hands in surrender.

Me: open that door now would you .

He seemed quite frightened.

Coward I see

Me: NOW!!! Before I shot your brains out !!

43

Me: NOW!!! Before I shot your brains out !!

Mihle : Pretty please put the gun down you're gonna end up hurt .

Me: Open the door !!!!!!! WOULD YOU!!

I was ready to shoot when he ducked . I ended up shorting the wardrobe. He tried pulling the gun from me . I was resistance. Hayke sajjisana sajjisana ixeshana He got hold of the part where you hold when shooting. No I won't let him

"hello!!" Someone is down stairs . "Pretty !!" It goes silent. While he's busy wondering who it was

I pinched his hand.

"BLAAAAAA!!!!!!" Im not sure who gets shot but there's blood on both of us. I here footsteps running towards the room . So much blood gashes on stomach . I think I got shot . My baby ? My baby !!

Luyanda walks in

Luya : damn !!Pretty !!!

I started getting dizzy I could see Someone was being reprimanded . My eyes heavy . I yearn to sleep. I close my eyelids.

-

-

Luyanda Pov

—

I finally decided that I should go and check on Mihle and Pretty like she requested . To be honest I was kind of annoyed coz I know she wants to show off or something. How and what could possibly need me to be there , to help ? With what ? Mxm some people thou . At least Bonke is keeping me busy for the meantime . Does she have a boyfriend? I don't know and I don't care .

—

When I arrive I go through password door and say

"I am not in the mood"

Yeah that is the password.

I walk in , it seems they were eating but most probably they are now... Lemme not be like that.

"Hello !" No response

"Pretty!! " No response

I hear a gunshot when got there Pretty lays unconscious. Mihle had his hands all over her more like crying.

Me: what happened ?

Mihle: call the ambulance would you .

-

Lucky for us the hospital ain't that far so the ambulance arrives quick

-

We were now in the waiting room . I was anxious about what will happen next. I have not said a word since I walked in and I feel so guilty for not picking up her calls and I also came late when she needed me the most . It's most probably my fault . It's my fault she's in this hospital. That she's lying on that hospital bed. I should ...I should have responded I didn't notice I was crying. Tears on my palms . I stood up and wiped them without drawing attention and walked up and down panicking . Where are the damn doctors?!

I even hate staying in hospital I don't know why they are taking so long. I recall the time when Pretty was with me here . I smile at the thought. Sad that the last time I was here to take the cement off she wasn't here.

I take a look at Mihle he's literally pale. He's been staring through space the whole time. Emotionless.

-

The doctor pulls through I rush to him , Mihle walks slow towards us.

Doctor : I've got bad news and good news . Which one do I start with

Me: good news

Mihle: I get to decide not you .

Me: good news please .

Mihle gives me a stare . We'll get to know the news anyway .

Doctor: Pretty suffered a miscarriage Im sorry about that .

I put my hands on my face . Hot liquid rushes on my face . I'm sure by now I'm red as a tomato. She was pregnant!!

Mihle: is she alive doc?

Doc: yes she made it . She's in the coma and there's hope . But we still have to do surgery to remove the bullet . Does she have any family members?

Me: yes yes I'll give them a call right away.

Mihle: what do you think you doing?

I stopped dialing

Me: calling her parents

Mihle: don't worry I'll let them know

Me: if you say so

We went back to sitting

Me: tell me

Advertisement

what happened?

Mihle: nothing

Me: that doesn't seem like "nothing " to me .

Mihle: ok fine want the truth . She tried shooting me.

Me: no way . But the message she sent me s-

Mihle: she sent you a message ?

Me: yeah with your phone and it said that she needed help . I thought it was help with something .

Mihle: oh no we're fine now

Me: there is something you're not telling. How did she get shot .

Mihle : self defence I was defending myself.

Cops came and asked for my statement .

-

Mihles pov

-

-

I know y'all hate me by now but I'm not prepared to go to jail .

So i gotta do what I gotta do . The cops came and I made my statement. After that I went to see her I wanted to be the first one she wakes up too so I can tell her to shut the fuck up .

I stayed there for like hours

I went to check on Luya , he's another headache yerr .

Luya: is she alright?

Me: yeah . Man thanks were writing tomorrow I think you better get going.

Luya: and you?

Me: don't worry about me

Luya: alright . Take care .

He leaves , thank you very much.

•

I sleep on the chair besides her . Here hand is so small and mine is so big.

Her hand moves maybe it me.

"Water"

She's awake . She's awake thank God .

I give her . She looks at me disgusted and tries calling the nurse
I prevent her .

Me: babe

I tighten her hand

Me: listen to me . You're gonna tell the police you remember
nothing okay .

Pretty: no

She says in a low voice like it's a difficult task to talk.

Pretty: nurse!!

Her voice is too low.

Me: Pretty you gonna do as I say once you if don't . I'll kill myself or how about

Pretty: I don't care !!

Me: let's say I'll kill your family. And don't you dare don't you dare try leave me . You know what is coming for you.

•

She looks frightened and she nodded at my instructions. She's quite cute .

Me: plus I'll change for better

Pretty: where is my baby ?

Me: ummmmm uh

Pretty: Talk where is my baby ?

Me: sorry babe you had a miscarriage.

Pretty: what !!

Her high blood was rising

Me: Nurse!!!!

I pressed the button .

•

I do not get why she is upset about that baby . I mean he was going to be disabled . I wouldn't be able to live with that in my house and let him be my child. No way.

—

In seven days yep a week she's discharged and the police force are doing the investigations . Like hell they will.

Me and my baby just arrived back home .

I threw her a little welcome back home party . It's just me and her . I promise myself even that from now on I won't lay a hand on her . I promise myself

Everything is gonna be different.

She gives me a cold smile.

Pretty: thanks

Me; pleasure ma baby

I hug her .

Me: I love you I love you I love you . I don't wanna live without you. I don't know how the world can be like without you in it . You're special . You know that.

Me: please don't leave me

Pretty: I won't

•

She genuinely smiles ,she tightens the hug with her head pressed on my chest . My heart beating fast . I place my hand on her shoulder and kiss her forehead repeatedly .

I love her Sooo much

—

She goes up stairs to rest and I let her be.

I take an apple and I myself walked up stairs when I got there I see her with many pills on her hand . Glass filled of water by her side . She puts the pills on her mouth

Me: what are you doing ?!!

She drinks the water I rush downstairs for the milk and bubbles (ugwebu) coming out of her mouth . I made her drink the milk and carried her to the hospital

44

Prettys POV

—

My life flashed in front of me . All the nice and bad memories feel like they are playing at once . Oh Lord my saviour please help me. I believe that you are the only one who can save me and I trust in you . I give my life to you . Please let me get in heaven if this is me dying now.

—

I could here voices far away . Maybe that is Jesus . It's all white and shiny probably it's the angel . A man with blonde hair appears wearing all white .

"Ms Molokai welcome back " he says

Me: Jesus ,is that you .

More people with white clothing appear.

"She's awake let's run some tests ."

Tests are run in heaven ??

I feel something sharp pinching me and soon I fall unconscious.

I wake up later and no one is beside me . I stare at the white walls and noticed on the side that there is TV . Sdumo . Sgudi Snaysi is playing . I watch the show .

"Uthi ndimdala !" I was in stitches . So uLowiser has been married 5 times and she's a granny but doesn't want people to say she's old . Tjo some grannies thou they remind me Mihles granny I mean Sisi , she has nails Sana . And weave la girl

"Someone is in a good mood "

Oh that Luyanda Masango AKA my ex boyfriend and friend.

I'm not sure whether I should smile or what.

Me: where is Mihle?

He smirks then clenched jaw .

Luya : after all that you ask him. First thing you say when you are finally awake is ask that dog.

Me: he's not a dog .

He breathes in hard . Closes his eyes clenching his jaw again

Luya: you love him ?

Me: I don't know

We stay quiet for sometime. He eventually comes and sit next to me .

Me: he will kill if he finds you here. Where is he?

Luya: don't worry he won't harm you you're safe now .

I open my mouth slightly tears filling my eyes .

Luya: he's arrested .

Me: what!? Why !!

Luya: Pretty you enjoy being abused right?

Me: no but arrested !! That's big. He still has a life too you can't lock him up.

Luya: I have proof of him manhandling you . I hacked his computer where he stores the camera stuff . Like footages. It's not a strong evidence thou but who would leave their girlfriend to starve to death and give them food after 7 hours . Worse you were pregnant.

Me: Luya

Luya: serious This is a serious case Pretty . Woman are abused everyday and you're one of them then you tell me to shut up.

Me: I didn't

Luya: but you don't want him locked up right ?

Me: I mean that's hash he's still a student. How did you even get here let alone know I am here ?

Luya: change of topic I see but it's fine

Me: I asked you a question.

Luya: and I'll answer it (he breathes out) so happen to have gone to your house to check up on you. I let myself in since it's me . And I saw Mihle dragging you . To where? I don't know . But he told me he was taking you to the hospital . At that time I already called the cops and he was arrested right then .

Me: that's ...it's overwhelming Luya . I don't know how to react and ...

I remain silent .

Luya: it's okay .

Me: it's not okay .

Luya: it will be okay

I laugh . Joke .

Me: when ?! When ?!

Luya: soon don't worry .

Me: that is fake hope . You're giving me fake hope . I don't know whose worse . You sleeping with my FRIEND or Mihle

Luya: don't you COMPARE me to him !!

He was angry too

Me: Just get out !!! Get out !!! GET OUT .

Luya: nxxxx(he clicks his tongue and clenches his jaw)

He leaves me . I burst out crying . I don't even wanna be here . What am I living for . Mihle would have just let me die . Or who ever saved me . I don't see the purpose to life . Lord why don't

you take my soul already. Take me now I can't I can't do this life
. I can't live in pain .

I drown in my own thoughts thinking

—

Flashback

—

Luya: as a friend . I advice you not to date with people who
already in a relationship. There are plenty of people . (Pointing
himself) available ones.

Then he threw one hand in the air more dramatically looking at
with me ,all his eyes out. I almost laugh he's such a drama
queen 😁😁

Me: keep dreaming .

I walked faster. He ran to catch up

Luya: but then think of it. You guys will get back together right then he'll be nice for a few days then hit you again. You don't want to put yourself in that type of situation again.

Me: he seemed changed.

Luya: Pretty Molokai do this for yourself , your health just imagine saying you ran into a pole again because of him . The cycle will continue friend.

I rethink what he just said probably he's right . We finally arrived . I took my key out and opened.

Me: wait here while I take the book .

—

End of flashback

—

Luyanda Masango



Pretty Molokai. The girl that is strong , warm hearted

Advertisement

beautiful inside and out . I can't believe I didn't see this early enough . I was suppose to be her friend but I left her on her worst. From now on I will dedicate my time to her . I love her . She's my friend . She's a sister . She's cool. She smiles . She's sweet. She's kind regards. She's naughty. She's an angel. She's way more than words can describe.

I lay on my bed and dailed Bonkes No. I need her as in now .

Convo over phone

Me: y'all already know what I want .

Bonke: I'm coming dzaddy

Indeed she comes .

I am wearing shorts and nothing else. It's hot guys . 34 degree's
it's just that I need to destress .

I walk to the door and open once she sends an message she's
already here. Wearing a green short tight skirt and black crop
tee written CUTIE in white . Afro hair neatly combed and big
round earrings. Her lips awww it those big full lips and they
look so juicy with a red lipstick on . Her lips go along with her
eyes almost popping out but sparkling. Her thick perfect looking
thighs all out . And the way she carries herself kills me. She's
neat guys like literally.

Me: yummy

She blushed I close the door after her and grab her big ass .
Some people have it all nje in life .

She kisses me and pushed me to the bed .

Bonke: I have condoms

She takes them out waving them in the air then kisses me hungrily . Just what I wanted .

—

Prettys POV

—

My life flashed in front of me . All the nice and bad memories feel like they are playing at once . Oh Lord my saviour please help me. I believe that you are the only one who can save me and I trust in you . I give my life to you . Please let me get in heaven if this is me dying now.

—

I could here voices far away . Maybe that is Jesus . It's all white and shiny probably it's the angel . A man with blonde hair appears wearing all white .

"Ms Molokai welcome back " he says

Me: Jesus ,is that you .

More people with white clothing appear.

"She's awake let's run some tests ."

Tests are run in heaven ??

I feel something sharp pinching me and soon I fall unconscious.

I wake up later and no one is beside me . I stare at the white walls and noticed on the side that there is TV . Sdumo . Sgudi Snaysi is playing . I watch the show .

"Uthi ndimdala !" I was in stitches. So uLowiser has been married 5 times and she's a granny but doesn't want people to say she's old . Tjo some grannies thou they remind me Mihles granny I mean Sisi , she has nails Sana . And weave la girl

"Someone is in a good mood "

Oh that Luyanda Masango AKA my ex boyfriend and friend.

I'm not sure whether I should smile or what.

Me: where is Mihle?

He smirks then clenched jaw .

Luya : after all that you ask him. First thing you say when you are finally awake is ask that dog.

Me: he's not a dog .

He breathes in hard . Closes his eyes clenching his jaw again

Luya: you love him ?

Me: I don't know

We stay quiet for sometime. He eventually comes and sit next to me .

Me: he will kill if he finds you here. Where is he?

Luya: don't worry he won't harm you you're safe now .

I open my mouth slightly tears filling my eyes .

Luya: he's arrested .

Me: what!? Why !!

Luya: Pretty you enjoy being abused right?

Me: no but arrested !! That's big. He still has a life too you can't lock him up.

Luya: I have proof of him manhandling you . I hacked his computer where he stores the camera stuff . Like footages. It's not a strong evidence thou but who would leave their girlfriend to starve to death and give them food after 7 hours . Worse you were pregnant.

Me: Luya

Luya: serious This is a serious case Pretty . Woman are abused everyday and you're one of them then you tell me to shut up.

Me: I didn't

Luya: but you don't want him locked up right ?

Me: I mean that's hash he's still a student. How did you even get here let alone know I am here ?

Luya: change of topic I see but it's fine

Me: I asked you a question.

Luya: and I'll answer it (he breathes out) so happen to have gone to your house to check up on you. I let myself in since it's me . And I saw Mihle dragging you . To where? I don't know . But he told me he was taking you to the hospital . At that time I already called the cops and he was arrested right then .

Me: that's ...it's overwhelming Luya . I don't know how to react and ...

I remain silent .

Luya: it's okay .

Me: it's not okay .

Luya: it will be okay

I laugh . Joke .

Me: when ?! When ?!

Luya: soon don't worry .

Me: that is fake hope . You're giving me fake hope . I don't know whose worse . You sleeping with my FRIEND or Mihle

Luya: don't you COMPARE me to him !!

He was angry too

Me: Just get out !!! Get out !!! GET OUT .

Luya: nxxxx(he clicks his tongue and clenches his jaw)

He leaves me . I burst out crying . I don't even wanna be here .
What am I living for . Mihle would have just let me die . Or who
ever saved me . I don't see the purpose to life . Lord why don't
you take my soul already. Take me now I can't I can't do this life
. I can't live in pain .

I drown in my own thoughts thinking

—

Flashback

—

Luya: as a friend . I advice you not to date with people who already in a relationship. There are plenty of people . (Pointing himself) available ones.

Then he threw one hand in the air more dramatically looking at with me ,all his eyes out. I almost laugh he's such a drama queen

Me: keep dreaming .

I walked faster. He ran to catch up

Luya: but then think of it. You guys will get back together right then he'll be nice for a few days then hit you again. You don't want to put yourself in that type of situation again.

Me: he seemed changed.

Luya: Pretty Molokai do this for yourself , your health just imagine saying you ran into a pole again because of him . The cycle will continue friend.

I rethink what he just said probably he's right . We finally arrived . I took my key out and opened.

Me: wait here while I take the book .

—

End of flashback

—

Luyanda Masango



Pretty Molokai. The girl that is strong , warm hearted , beautiful inside and out . I can't believe I didn't see this early enough . I was suppose to be her friend but I left her on her worst. From now on I will dedicate my time to her . I love her . She's my friend . She's a sister . She's cool. She smiles . She's sweet. She's kind regards. She's naughty. She's an angel. She's way more than words can describe.

I lay on my bed and dailed Bonkes No. I need her as in now .

Convo over phone

Me: y'all already know what I want .

Bonke: I'm coming dzaddy

Indeed she comes .

I am wearing shorts and nothing else. It's hot guys . 34 degrees 🔥 it's just that I need to destress .

I walk to the door and open once she sends an message she's already here. Wearing a green short tight skirt and black crop tee written CUTIE in white . Afro hair neatly combed and big round earrings. Her lips awww it those big full lips and they look so juicy with a red lipstick on . Her lips go along with her eyes almost popping out but sparkling. Her thick perfect looking thighs all out . And the way she carries herself kills me. She's neat guys like literally.

Me: yummy

She blushed I close the door after her and grab her big ass .
Some people have it all nje in life .

She kisses me and pushed me to the bed .

Bonke: I have condoms

She takes them out waving them in the air then kisses me
hungrily . Just what I wanted .

45

After that steamy session we cuddle . I don't wanna jus drop her like that . You feel me .

Bonke: baby

Me: yea

Bonke : why don't we ever go out and eat dinner . Meet your friends. It's always me having to come here and have sex with you all the time .

Me: thing is I don't know what we are. I thought it was those no hard feelings typa thing and I'm hoping it's that .

Bonke: what ?

Me: yeah I'm sure you have a boyfriend.

Bonke: yeah I do and I'm gonna dump him for you because I think I love you more than him

Just what I hate from these ladies

Bonke: or I'll tell Pretty about us .

Me: she already knows. Look Bonke you're a nice girl but you and I . It's never gonna happen.

Bonke: so you were using me .

Me: you used me too. We're both enjoying this right ?

Bonke: you jerk .

She hit me with a punch well it's a soft punch but I think she thinks she hits me hard so I fake it

Me: ouch ouch

Bonke: you deserve it .

She was now teary.

Bonke: you flirt with me ,sleep with me now you tell me it was a fling .

She says dressing up. It's late in the night is she going out? Coz I'm not gonna let her. Yea I know I might be a bad person but I'm not gonna allow her to be another victim of rape, murder or some human trafficking whatever.

Me: I'm sorry things had to end that way . I'm sure you'll find someone who loves you that way .

Bonke: I want you why don't you understand !!!

She was crying so hard I know I've had a thousand cases like this but this one is kinda touching.

I want to hold and tell her I've done a mistake or no I was lying coz I can't stand to see her cry . I feel like crying too . I finally give in

Me: alright , I'll see what I can do . Let's do this.

Bonke: really ?

Me: yea

She hurried to hug me with a teary face.

Me: so what do we do now?

-

I really not a relationship type person .

-

Bonke: get to know each other.

Me: oh okay

Bonke: so (she sits on the bed) we ask each other questions.

Me: okay you go first.

Bonke: umm what's your favourite thing to do?

Me: easy. Sex

Bonke: haibo serious

Me: I'm dead serious

She looks at me in disbelief

Me: You go second . What's yours ?

Bonke: painting.

Me: ohh that's cool.

Dude I don't know where this conversation is going I'm so bored .

Bonke: oh okay so what do you like eating?

Me: food

She giggled . Did I say something funny?

Bonke: be specific.

Me: that's a hard question coz I eat everything. For example YOU .

I crawl to her and when I'm close to her she gives me that look but I continue anyway. I breath on her neck slowly kissing it leaving wet kisses in every inch of her neck .She gasps for air and slowly breathes out shaky . She shivers a little. I love the way she responds and the effect I have on her .

I move to her babies and switch on the music

♪♪♪ ♪ ♪♪♪ ♪ ♪♪♪ ♪ ♪♪♪

I wanna make love, yeah

I wanna make love to you baby, that's all I wanna do, oh girl

I can't get enough, ooh yeah, hey

I'm loving you baby, that's all I wanna do

Girl I wanna love you, baby

Oh I wanna make love to you

Advertisement

yeah

I said baby, baby, baby, woah

I wanna make love to you, yeah yeah yeah

Yeah baby, girl you look so good

You're all I can think about, the only one I can't be without,
yeah

Everything you do, woah, oh no

Girl I swear I have no doubt, I'm gon' make you scream and
shout

Chris Brown _make love_

=And the rest is history=

46

Bonke PoV

I woke up to some music playing . J Cole. He's actually kinda my favourite artist.

Another song played.

Oh right, oh

Oh why na-da-da-da

I keep my head high

I got my wings to carry me

I don't know freedom

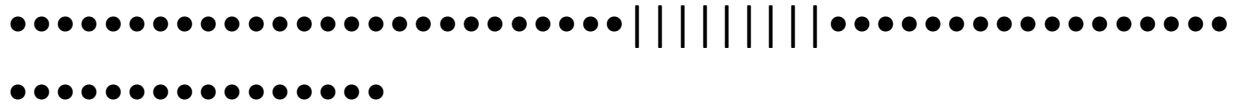
I want my dreams to rescue me

I keep my faith strong

I ask The Lord to follow me

I've been unfaithful

I don't know why You call on me



I watched at the view of Luya singing along with the song while cooking something. He actually sings good I must say . I want to

watch him till forever . Can't believe I'll be having breakfast in bed .I decided to sing along

Me: I keep my head .

He turned to me and smile holding a spatula . Then put the spatula close to his mouth acting as mic the we sang together.

"Apparently ,You believe in me, You believe in me"

.....| | | | | | | |.....
.....

Luya: look who's up . I am making breakfast for us .

Me: thank you very much sweetheart

He then starts rapping along with the song .

Luya:

Another day another rhyme hoe

Another day another time zone

[He raps waving hands in the lower space like rappers do . He's good]

Today I woke up feelin' horny so it's only right

I got two bitches playin' on my trombone

Keep up, never sure where the words would take me

[he catches for air then he walks to me walking according to the beat]



Me: damn you're goooooood

Luya: I knooooow but thanks sweetie.

I blushed

Me: you're so full of yourself

He sneers revealing the last teeth he has . I chuckle along with him getting up to kiss those inviting lips . I kiss him he pulls out quickly

Luya: I am still cooking you know . After this I am all yours I promise.

He pecks my lips . While I go back to bed and continue watching him in those boxers and ifskoti(that thing you wear when cooking)

—

After the amazing breakfast in bed he escorts me to my hostel . He's sweet I love him so much . I actually feel bad I'm dating my friends ex but I love him what else should I do . We stand by the hostel and stare into each other's others . He seems a bit uncomfortable.

Luya: I should get going .

I see we're attracting eyes including Lisa and Melissas . I kiss him he doesn't respond .

Me: kiss me back.

Luya: not in front of people . People are staring.

Then guess who showed up . My boyfriend Lumko .

Me: babe I can explain .

Luya recieved a call and he walks away answering it .

Me: honey Yami I can explain. It's not what you think.

Lumko : not what I think my foot . You of all people I thought we had something special . I thought you loved but you do this to me .

Me: okay okay I get it and I am sorry .

Lumko: Yaz I loved you even though you once we're pregnant.

Me: what does that have to do with this ? Huh

Lumko: it's ...I loved you and this is how you show your appreciation.

Me: you sound like you were doing me a favour. Leave me alone I didn't even love you in the first place

Crowd : uwuuuuuuuu esheeeee

I walk in hostel and me myself and I are thee topic for today as if I care.

—

Luyanda Pov

—

Pretty called and saved me from that dilemma . She's actually getting discharged today so it's my cue to go.

-

I go to her room and pack some of the stuff I think she will need and take Siphos Car (we share it but it's his)

When I get there she's making the bed. I bought her flowers on the way . White roses resembling peace I think .

I hate it when we fight it's just that she makes me so mad. And every time when I'm frustrated I need a cigarette. And I smoke often when we are not on speaking terms like after the big argument we had yesterday.

I smile at her like a genuine smile .

Me: hi there

Pretty: hi there too.

Me: I bought flowers .

Pretty: did you bring clothes?

Me: yeah .

Pretty: thanks now get out I need some business to do .

Me: with pleasure

I salute her then put flowers on some vase then I go to the waiting room .

—

Prettys POV

—

As soon as he goes I take the flowers and smell them . I love flowers guys y'all have no idea . They smell so good. A scent of violets, nasturtium, and lemon .

•

I get back to what I was doing . Then we finally leave . I'm back in my room . The flat . Yeah . It.

Luya: if you need anything. As in anything just shout.

Me: Ok will do .

He walks out. I threw myself in the bed so tired.

—

I think it's about time I tell mom what happened so I call her

I tell her just the important parts . I'm expecting her to shout at me but the line went silent.

Me:mom still there?

I hear efuxhuza (nose problem) caba she has fever .

Background: mama sukhala (don't cry)

That's probably Milisa .

I dropped the call coz I couldn't take it . Umzali wakho alile ngenxa yakho (parent crying because of you) yho guys that's the worst feeling ever .

After 30 minutes of crying. Another call from Kuhle

Kuhle: Mntase what happened? Yinton le ndiyivayo(what I'm I hearing)

Me: yeka Kuhle I don't wanna trouble you .

Kuhle: trouble us. UnguMntase nje how can you trouble me (I feel like he has a runny nose or something) njani (how) .

Mntase I promise yabona (you see) that Mihle will die I will kill him with my both hands .

—

Ebenesingqala shame making hic cups all the time and talking all emotional.

—

Me: I'll be fine Mntase yeka man

Kuhle: okay ke . (He hic cups)

He drops call

I have a huge headache . I sleep after crying silently.

Pretty Point Of View

It's Friday ,prize giving day .

I shine my shoes yet again and wore my navy uniform with white navy socks and with Blue strips . Blue shirt and a navy blazer . I tie my hair into a pony tail then wore my shoes they are quite big and sometimes I am made fun of them but I like them

If you're thinking ... How am I coping . Well here is an answer . Angikho right . Ndiphefumla ngenxeba (I'm breathing throw the wound) I wonder who came up with this fraze. But I've been trying to cope . I think . I'm still afraid of walking outside ,afraid of what may happen . What if someone wants to kidnap me again or rape me or even worse kill me . And with Mihle now out of prison I am always afraid. Yeah he's out . That's the South Africa we live in guys and I think it's about time we accept. As far as I know there is a restraining order between us

so he can't get near me even if he wants to . Since Luya was deputy headboy now he's the headboy and Mihle stepped down because of what happened I mean he's no longer an example and honestly People seem scared of him well I'm not sure . Yet

I here a knock on the door while I just started packing . I mean holidays are starting I have to go home and but to think of going home . I'm not ready to face them just yet! I am terrified of the treatment I may get. Just imagine mom just found out his son loves men . And I on the other hand have been a victim of rape and abuse and suicide . I didn't tell her about the suicide yhoo she would kill me herself . Sometimes I just don't get black parents. They just dont understand the concept of depression once you say that you have depression. Hay uzphakamisile you're suddenly seeking for attention. It's the reality and the life we live in. So not telling her that is quite better coz I wouldn't bare it.

I even forgot someone was knocking until I here the door open. I screamed , what if liphara (Tsotsi) or worse those people want to kidnap me . My heart is beating fast and I take what is in front of me . A knife and stance .

"Pretty" oh it's Luya

He is shocked once he sees me with a knife trying to attack him . He backs away and bumps on the door.

Luya: Pretty are you trying to kill me ?

I put the knife on the table giving him a cold look.

Me: please stop playing your games or else I'll hurt you .

Luya: yea right . Says the person who has been locking themselves up for the past two weeks.

Me: what do you want from me Luyanda?

Luya: you're even calling me by my full name.

Me: just talk dammit !

I snatch the knife and point at him angrily.

Luya: for the hundredth time you need help .

Me: no I'm fine so what do you want ?

Luya: let's go to school

Sounding kinda unsure of what he was saying.

Me: so when you look at me you see a clown . Look at what I'm wearing . Do I look like a clown to you ?Nx (I click my tongue)

Luya: I'll wait outside.

Me: Fine !

I take my time . I don't remember when last I went to school but what I know I was writing Maths I didn't even know what I was writing . But I'll see today when we get reports.

I take my Nike bag and look at the clock. Its 07:40 school commences at 07:30 so I am late. I just wanted to make sure I look good on my last day . To be honest I'm not even nervous for being late I don't care anymore.

When I walk out Luya is on the stoep waiting.

I lock and walk past him . He stands and walks with me .

Luya: Look I have organised a psychologist for you to talk to hence you don't want to talk to any one

Me: I don't need one.

Luya: Im not asking you Im telling you. You'll meet her after collecting reports, she'll be here and you guys can connect and talk. Look Pretty you've gone through a lot and you need that emotional support.

If you can't open up to me as your friend then

definitely professional help is the only way I can support you with.

I breathe out heavy annoyed.

We walk in silence from time to time I could see him stealing glances . I ignore him and walk faster than him till we reached school. It's quite I think all students are at the assembly. I start with going to the bathroom coz I want to .Luya leaves me in peace

finally!!! Then when I am finished with my business i open the bathroom door then walk to the corridor . I opened the hall door and yes indeed all students are gathered there. Everyone turns to me. Yeah late comers sit in front so I walk slowly enjoying the attention I am getting

"She's so full of herself , look at her look at her. "

"Don't look yet she's still looking this side"

"Is she still with Mihle"

"No chommy kalok ithi lento...." -it is like this chommy-

I finally take a seat and Luya is at the front making a speech I think . He looks at me briefly

And continues

Luya: thank you Miss Molokai for the show. As I was saying Today we are having prize giving . I hope to see you again here in the hall at 10:00 am after receiving your reports . I thank you.

He walks down the steps to his seat . Headboy seat .

Amanda also comes in late but at that we were doing The Lords prayer so not so much attention was drawn to her .

-

We received our reports . I don't know how I would say I am feeling coz I feel emotionless. Mrs Brown calls my name I go take my report by before that she gave that " are you serious stare"

Ma'am : Pretty you get that you are in Grade 12

Me: yes ma'am

Ma'am: what happened my child . You did great last term . I can't believe you have a level 4 in English, you're always the top achiever in English what happened hiii mntanam . Hay khawuyshe(please tell me)

I thought you were gonna be my level 7 in English but look now Bonke has that level 7 and Lisa your friend is level 6 and Melissa level 5 with a 69% almost 6 . Pull up your socks or you'll fail .

She gives me my report . I'm not sure whether I am disappointed in myself or what but I'm not happy.

I open my report.

English 52

IsiXhosa 45

Mathematics. 30

Physical science. 33

Life sciences. 32

Life orientation. 67

Geography. 51

At least Geo made me smile . Well that was because I wrote it before all this happened or because I was kinda prepared. But others I'm not happy with my marks . At all

After I received my results I went to the counselling room, where I'd get to see my psychologist. I don't

say a lot throughout the sessions but I can say it's quite a wakeup call though and my psychologist is nice and understanding, she gives out hugs and comfort. Im looking forward on having another session coz I got to vent out some of the heavy things that I experienced. Being bullied to being emotionally, sexually and physically abused. The grief of losing an unborn baby and father in one year. It really was a wakeup call and I felt better after the session. It's like something is lifted off my shoulders.

Pam (psychologist): you just have to take things slow and don't be hard on yourself okay.

She gives me tissue so I can wipe my tears.

Pam: we'll meet again when schools open okay? And I want you to have my number so that if you want to talk, you call.

I wiped my tears as I take her business card.

Pam: it's gonna be okay, feeling better now?

Me: yeah

Pam: you're beautiful, you know that? Don't ever let anyone tell you another wise.

My lips curl into a smile. I still don't believe that I'm beautiful thou. The bell rang. I walk out of the counselling room

It's 10: 00 am so we go to the hall again for prizes . There is this award called the losers award. That's literally the lowest student . Im sure I'm not the lowest . I mean Lisa can be the lowest.

Luyanda is called out . He gets an award of being the top student in grade 12 . I'm happy for him . I clap my hands along with others . Mihle is the second top achiever with 5 distinctions but top achiever in Maths coz apperantly he got 94% while I get what? 30 % . I want to cry but it's cool. It's like I'm that clever I mean last term in maths I got 67% it improved but now back to square one . I watch Luyanda going to take an award for Life sciences. This guy loves life sciences I'm sure

what he nailed the most was the reproduction part . I mean which guy is interested in talking about periods ? if there are then there is a few of them . Lisa is called for Physical Science distinction in the category of *most improved* not top achiever everyone is astonished . And Bonke obviously English.

I clap for everyone and shame I congratulate them but they didn't pay much attention because ...they now famous everyone is calling their name

.

It seems if the prize giving is over now so I start packing my chair.

"Can I have your attention please"

We all look at principal . I forgot to mention someone. How can I forget this award .

"Pretty Molokai"

I am so shocked I didn't think I'll actually get an award . I cry in tears of joy . I walk up to the stage .

Luya is cheering up for me Ahh my no. 1 supporter .

Bonke is smiling at me .

I see a slight smile on Mihles face.

As always the type of award is revealed once you get there .

Principal: I award you the Losers award

Me: what ?!!

The crowd laughs and I can't believe what is happening my eyes are blurry . The noise seems far . I can't believe this

—

I see people looking over me

"Are you okay ? You fainted "

I look around . I am in corridor and Mrs Brown and other teachers are staring at me .

Me: I'm fine.

Mrs Brown : I'll drive you home

Me: no no I am fine .

Mrs: I insist

Okay sooooo Mrs Brown is a 25 young woman who is literally the nicest teacher I ever had . She's my favourite . To be honest . But acts like she's 40 . But I like her

"You're sure you're gonna be okay? "

Me: yeah .

Mrs: if you need me kid I'm always available. Now young lady focus more on your books and leave Mihle and Luyanda alone okay.

Me: yeah I will ma'am

Mrs: that's my girl

She kisses my forehead. She never did that before .I feel so special now . I blush and she winks and leaves I blush even more and burry myself with a pillow to hide my smile.

Okay now on books books books . I wonder where will I get the motivation. I drown in my thoughts and ended up falling asleep

I am woken by a noise of people shifting furniture I think .

I furiously go directly to the room where the noise is coming from and knock violently .

Luya: what!!

He asks breathing heavily and all sweaty . Kinda smiling.

"Baby come back" i saw a figure coming towards the door.

Bonke . I feel so betrayad he's still with her after ...after all that he is still with her.

Me: I am being tested here Bonke this is my ex !!! How are you Kanti

Bonke: so ?

Me: so?!

Luya: ladies please stop all of this .

Me : no no Luyanda I won't. This is unacceptable we don't date each other's ex it's the girl code .

Bonke: I love him !

Me: does he love you ?

Luya: okay that's enough!!

He comes between us coz she wanted to beat me up and I wouldn't let do that . I'd kill her straight does she know me.

Me: Luyanda I am making you chose right now. If you still want our "friendship " to continue dump her . If not don't ever talk to me call me or anything like that . The thing (I point his chest then I point my chest repeatedly)we have is overrrr

Luya: that's unfair.

Me: mxxxm

I walk to my room but stop halfway.

Me: I forgot something. Keep it down some of us are trying to sleep. He chuckles .

I want to laugh too coz wow he's laugh is contagious.

I lay on my bed think . Heeeee I got the losers award guys heeeeeee haibo. I'm such a joke . Wow I never thought I was this stupid. Wow . W-O-W hay ndingu Nicole TV ngok haybo. About 30 minutes later. I heard a knock.

I opened Me: talk ! Luya: can I come in

I move from the way ,he gets in .

I avoid looking myself at the mirror coz wow the girl ain't pretty as her name . I look like a dinosaur that died and now it's going stale . The way my face is like theres literally no meat here . It's like I'm a skeleton , a dinosaur skeleton to be exact . I don't even remember when last did I eat . I only drink water.

Luya: so I have decided

Me: on what?

Luya: your deal

Me: ohh that was quick .

Luya: I chose our friendship Friend F . I can't stand to lose you. Again .

Me: okay but it will take days coz I'm still healing so you're not my friend . Yet.

Luya: how many days?

Me: a Month(I stretch my hair) it depends maybe a year

Luya: you can not be serious

Me: I am dead serious.

Luya: okay what if I take you out on a holiday for a week . I'll pay . I'll take you to the best hotel .

So what do you say?

I will also having spa . Please friend F this may be good for your health also . Just to freshen up .

Me: mmmmmh sounds temping .

After some minutes of him waiting for my response. I attack him with a hug .

Me: you're the best Friend F .

Luya: yheyyyy let me go start packing .

Me: wait you're also going ?

Luya: yeah why not?!

Ohhh okay I see I see

46

"Me-meet me at The London

If you find time, we can run one

Talk about some things we can't undo"

The London - Young thug feat J Cole Travis Scott

The song was playing on the USB on our way. We're going to Durban it's not that far when we're here just a few hours drive

.

Luya sings along all the songs .

Me: you like J Cole huh?

Luya: yeah

He continues rapping .

I nodded not wanting to disturb him any further.

—

We arrive , we book the best hotel as he said but didn't include food coz ... Pssshhh I don't know but we both just didn't feel like eating there you feel .

Luya: are you hungry?

Me: mmmh I don't think so

Luya: when did you last eat?

Me: yesterday but I'm still full so.

Luya: ok can you accompany me I want to get some food .

Me: yes Sir

I changed into something more warmer coz it's kinda cold .

We go to steers he buys two double burgers . KFC buys bucket (10 pieces) . Spar he buys two loads of bread and coke .

Luya: are you sure you don't want food we can eat at any place you want and trust me I can finish all of this

Me: yeah I'm sure .

I'm getting stares I think it's because of how thin I look. They probably think I'm dying or something.

He warms the food while I'm watching Frozen Singing along

Me: let it go can't take it any more

"Are you crying? Or are you crying" I giggled coz most probably I sound like a horse

He sits next to me with a tray full of meat .

I love KFC guys but I'm trying to lose weight so I can't eat.

Me: no I'm singing

He takes a bite ,I watch him chew slowly at the meat mmmh sbwl . He takes another piece.

Luya: want one?

Me: just one.

I hate myself for this . I take one and eat mmmmmmmh it's so good I ended eating 4 pieces and we finished the two loads of bread . I couldn't take it anymore so Luya at the two burgers.

After the movie ended I went to my room .

Luya: hey!! You don't even say goodnight

Me: good night Luks yhu yadika(you're annoying)

And so I got in the room and took sometime to stare at myself. I am getting there and I don't have to ruin it now so I went to the bathroom to puke all the food .

In the morning I wake up and I am all weak . But anyway I get up and take a shower I think it's raining. More like drizzling coz it ain't that heavy.

I lotion and look at the traces of marks that didn't disappear. I hate him . I hate Mihle I hate him with my all .

My life has been hard like from losing a father to being bullied at school , abusive relationship . It's easy to count these . It's like they are light things but going through them is pain and it still hurts even now . I want to take a jog and so I did . I had water and I took an apple before going I don't know why I ate before

As I run

Advertisement

the sea air bits my cheeks . The sunrise looks so beautiful in the horizon . As I jog back I don't have enough energy to do so ,so I walk I'm so tired .

"Are you ok?" I hear someone say . I could feel my feet failing me. I feel so dizzy. Lights out.

I woke up in a hospital bed .

"She's awake , doctor!!" He pressed the button .

Luya: what happened?!!

Me: mmh I don't know .

The doctor comes in to give a report I think .

Doc: hello.

Us: hi

Doc: how is my patient doing today?

Me:I'm good

Doc: that's great to hear so It happens that Miss Molokai is facing anorexia nervosa. It's an illness where the patient doesn't eat . Usually pukes food because they want to lose weight. I'll do some more tests on her.

He walks out .

Me: that's not true.

Luya: I don't get why you need to lose weight. You're already skinny .

Me: no I'm fat fat look at me. (I look at the mirror)

My cheeks I want to lose more

Luya: tell you what I have never in my life met someone as stubborn as you.

Me: well thanks to me .

Luya: but come to think of it . Your health is way more important. It doesn't matter . What if you get fat then . Then what? Babes just do you and forget what other people say coz you'll never be yourself fully if you're thinking bazithin abantu . You are you and no body as in no body can take that away from you . Now do me a favour and be as healthy as possible . Take it slow coz I don't wanna see you in hospital again.

We were now walking after her being discharged . Just chilling as in at wimpy having dinner

Luya: what even made you think that you are fat.

Me: it's just that when I look at myself on the mirror thats what I see . Maybe the reason behind Mihles beating was because I wasn't beautiful and slim enough .

Luya: wanna see something

I nodded.

Luya: awsemhle

I genuinely smiled even blushing . Khaxa camera clicks

Me: you're taking a photo .

He shows me

Luya: and you're cute isn't it .

Me: noo I do not like it . Delete it.

Luya: this is my phone so I'm keeping it.

I make a sad face .

Luya: finish up your food so we can go take more pictures.

I did just that since there much to eat.

We go out and take a lot of pictures .

After we go to the beach then Shaka Marine. We go take a boat . A picture of us is taken as soon as we enter and I was busy talking . Luya laughing .

We grab something to eat at a nearest restaurant . I am quite and Luya is clearly enjoying the food coz he is shaking his head dancing to the rhythm of the music that is currently playing.

Luya: what?

Me: nothing just thinking?

Luya: about me ?

Me: no stupid. You're right here how can I be thinking about you.

Luya: you're right. So you are thinking about him . While you're here with me?

Me: yes .

Luya: and what exactly are you thinking about him ?

That's too much but it's fine if he wants to hear the answer.

Me: how he used to fuck me so good before he changed.

He chocks on his food. He coughs I give him water . He drinks and coughs again.

Luya: after all that you still think about that?

Me: it's not as easy as it is said . It's not easy knowing that I once slept by his side and he was holding me tight and never let go. Giving me soft kisses everyday and being introduced to his family . Being happy . Honestly I had my best and my worst times with him and I'll do honour the my happiness while I was with him .

Luya: so you still love him .

Me: I don't know!! How many times should I tell you !!

Luya: a thousand I didn't know you keep track of how many times I ask

Me: well I'm trying to forget but I can't do that overnight.

Luya: what about the time we had? What about us !!

We were attracting some attention now .

Me: keep your voice down.

Luya: don't you dare tell me that!!

He's never been this angry well at least to what I've seen.

Luya: y...(he controls himself)

He storms out. Okay I guess I'll settle the bill. I do just that and guess while I notice he was smoking. The smokes coming out of his nostrils like in those music videos.

And guess what he then starts the car and leaves me . Its fine it's not I don't know the way to the hotel. But for dinner I'm thinking of cooking spaghetti so I go to the shops to buy ingredients. Then take a taxi back to hotel. When I get there ,he's not there yet. Okay I start cooking while listening to some music . I'm into The soil yep yep yep

Me: I got joy in heart and I know it-the door opens and look who is back!!

He looks better .

Me: I Cooked.

Luya: thanks I thought we were going out.

Me: no .

Luya: you used your money?

Me: yeah take a sit I'm about to dish up.

He takes a look at me then shame he sits. I dish up .

Luya: I'll pay you back.

Me: what? No it's nothing just forget it.

Luya: but next time I pay .

Me: next time .

We both giggle it starts raining .

Me: I'm sorry about the outbreak I shouldn't have.

Luya: no it's me who is sorry I should I understand what you're going through and all that coz it won't be easy to heal .

—

Ah I love this guy so much . With my all he's like my big brother . Even the connection we have is so like that. I love the fact that he cares about me and I think I should show a sign of appreciation. You feel me.

—

Luya: is there more food

Oh God he already finished

Me: already?

Luya: yeah what's wrong with that? I'm not you .

I acted offended . He literally looked like he was sorry

Luya POV

Pretty: oh so your directing this to me ?

Me: no I mean I didn't mean it to come out like that .

Pretty: so you wanted It to come in another hurtful manner

She was even crying I felt so bad .

Me: I'm so sorry .

I went for a hug looking guilty ASF .

When I finally embraced her . She chuckled. What's so funny about this

Pretty: the prank is on you F .

Me: fuck I can't believe I fell for that

Pretty: you should have seen your face .

She laughs so hard she was even on her knees biting the table .
O M G what did she do to deserve that. It's not funny at all. I
can not believe she did that on me . I'm Luya the Prankster not
the other way round.

It was now storming I see she hates the lighting . I'll use that to
my advantage .

Me: let's watch a movie .

Pretty : which one ?

She says from the kitchen watching dishes. And dishing more
food for me. I pick out a movie . Annabelle (la movie
inalamntana ukroba on drain not sure if it's it)

But it's a horror movie.

I put the popcorns on microwave then in 5 Min they are ready .
I take out fleece and call her .

Pretty: what's the movie we are watching anyway.

Me: it's a surprise

Pretty: ohkay

She sits next to me and I cover her with the fleece .

The storm is getting stronger I could see her tense up.

Me: it's okay

Lay here on this comfortable chest baby

I point my chest . She gives me that look

Pretty : you're so full of yourself Yaz

But she still laid on my chest making herself comfortable while I eat .

Game on

Pretty PoV

Me: suhlafunela endlebeni yamu . Vala umlomo futhi(don't chew on my ear and close your mouth)

It's storming but we are watching TV weird. I know. But anyways I watch.

Me: no no don't go there !!

It's a horror Movie why did he pick this movie at this time and day .

I don't know when I sleep but I hear someone shaking me. I open my eyes and see blurry something white . A ghost I jump out of the couch and the ghost is chasing me . I get in my room . Think I lost it. Just when another one pop at the corner coming to me by the wall I scream and open the door another one on

the door. Duuuuu duuuu duu the storm on the other side. My heart beating fast what do I do . I run and take the dish we were eating with . It's wooden and strong. I turn and bit the ghost ngeeeeeee ouch that must hurt . I thought ghosts ain't flash .

"Ouch " i uncovered the person . It's Luya .

Luya: it was suppose to be a prank not wrestling.

Me: sorry but you deserve it . I almost peed on myself.

He chuckles.

Me:unyubantoni (what are laughing at)

I go take ice and put it on the spot so it doesn't get swollen.

Me: the other ghost where is it?

Luya: projector .

Me: Ohhhsorry I didn't mean to hit you hard .

Luya: I'm okay

Next day

We went to the games shame uneduma apha ebunzi oh yini shame (he's swollen on the forehead)

Me: uthi ubusenzani na chommy yam ? Yiiii Ghost hay lanto (what were you doing F)

Luya: I'm not Ghost please don't call me that .

I laugh at him

Me: hay Ghost. Ghosti Ghosti sithi Ghosti.

He looks at me annoyed. I laugh my ass out. I'm having a good time shame . I wish it never ends

After all that we went to eat at McDonald's . I had some cash so the treat is on me this time .

After ordering burger and milkshakes I offer to pay.

Luya: no I don't mind paying

Me: my treat

Luya: no no I'm paying.

The cashier looks at us confused .

Cashier: just pay half half

Me: fair enough

Luya: but it's not fair to me

I take out R200 and give the cashier .

Luya is quite throughout the lunch this dude needs to chill a little.

Me: friend listen . This is the 21 century so things are sometimes bound to be like this .

Luya: ok

Me: Luya look at me ,friend look at me .

I turn he's face to look at me . He turns to the side watching cars . He hasn't even touched his food .

Once I am finished . He still is staring at the cars mxm

I take his burger

Yhoo with 250 KM/h he turns to me

Luya: yabona ke yabona ke asovana yeka ukutya kwam . (Leave my food alone coz we won't be on equal terms)

Me: yho I thought..

Luya: I didn't say I don't want food .

He eats furiously .

He finishes the burger and goes to buy another one coz he's not full . He buys two more double burgers and eats them . Leaving nothing behind while I watch him ,drinking my milkshake.

iDrama

Pretty POV

Have you ever slept with a smiley face coz wow Life has been good . You're enjoying every minute of your life and it's full of happiness nje . That's how I feel right now .

I wake up quite early so I can at least try spoil my friend like he spoils me .

I go to the bathroom since we share the bathroom ,I open water for him in the bathtub then put foam bath . It smells so good in here ,like strawberries yeah definitely like strawberries. And so I went to the shops to buy some fresh breakfast stuff. Bacon ,eggs ,cheese,tomatoes lettuces and some bread . Fresh from the bakery.

I then start with cooking . It's not too much of work just when Luya enters .

Luya: Pretty Molokai

"Mmmh" I continue with what I was doing .

Luya: look at me .

I look . Is that him gosh he looks so fineee . He's literally wearing a bowtie , navy suit that fits him just fine . And pointed shoes then with the most charming smile that can charm every girl in that school . But not me . Hair cut is just a brush cut with waves kinda

Me: you look goood F where are you going ?

Luya: on a function . I'm been invited.

Me: and you did not tell me !

Luya: there was no need . You're my date so what's the big deal

Me: mmmh

I stare at him again gosh he's handsome this one he seems more like someone I know .

He's smiles at me

Me: I think you look like Trey Songz

Luya:Me? No way

Me: look at your eyes and the way you smile .

And breakfast is ready . I say as I dish up .

Luya: what did I do to deserve this treatment? First the bath now this . You're a friend indeed .

He kisses my cheek. I chuckled

Me: I know now let's dig in .

He gives me a stare more like admiring smiling then nods his head slightly while I take a fock and eat my boiled egg .

Me: what ? Why you staring at me like that ?

Luya: nothing

Me: mmmhh okay .

song played on the radio

"People fall in love in mysterious ways

Advertisement

maybe just a touch of hand . Oh me I fall in love with you every single dayI'm thinking out loud ,baby we found love right where we are. "

Something inside me got triggered ,this song . When Mihle took me out to East London and he gave me the promise ring . We danced with this song . I suddenly got up leaving my food

behind and ran to my room . I makes sure it's all locked up then leaned against the door slipping down till I sat on the Welcome mat. Tears involuntary escaped . Why do I miss him when I don't have too . I have to hate him . I have to get him out of my mind . I have to make all thoughts about him stop. I have to think for myself. I have to stop crying for him . I have to I have too coz he doesn't deserve my tears .

—

I hear a soft knock come through my door . What does he want?

Luya: Pretty open up.

Me:.....

Luya:Pretty please

Mucus rashes quickly out of my nose . I wipe with edge of my jersey .

Luya: Okay let me give you some space.

I hear footsteps disappear . Im now calm . I stood up and opened my phone . I can't believe I haven't deleted his photos Mihles photos that is but I first watch them . Memories flooding

on my mind . I smile at some crazy pics we took while tears steaming down my skeleton cheeks. Mucus involuntarily running down my nose . I don't bother myself to wipe anything.

I open my music and play Thinking out loud again.

I cry so much till my head pounds .

Luyanda Pov

I'm worried about her . She's been sad and recently she's been happy and I've been happy with her too. I feel so sad that she's sad it's like a part of me is being torn apart . Honestly healing process ain't easy and I think I should give her the space she needs. I go to the event alone , wasn't expecting that to happen but I had too coz... I mean it's business . I'm here to make money . Since I'm involved in IT mind you I haven't done any computer subject at school but I'm still one of the best IT recommendation . Talk about talent . I know I know I have a big ego but let's face it . Whose gonna boost my ego when I don't coz very few people actually like you some are pretending

The function went well . I took a cab straight away. I have put my phone on silent once I on it . It's flooding with messages like always from Bonke . My heart leaps in excitement . I think it's because I just like attention

"Babe wam I miss you" the message reads

Yerrr she gets on my last nerve .

I call her .

Bonke: hello

Me: can you stop calling me ... please.

Bonke: okay ...but can you answer me this . When will you see that I love you .

There it goes again the excitement .

Me: just leave me alone okay mnx don't ever call me or anything .

I block her contacts . At first I thought it was being too rude but now . No it's way too much .

When I get home . Hahaha Home I mean hotel I go to her room . She locked herself for that long . I push the door coz I know she's probably ...I don't wanna say it .

The door opens without too much effort then

-
-

Mihles POV

I heard a loud knock from the door and so I wear my gown, I rush downstairs . I open ,it's Amanda . What does she want ?

Me: and you?

Amanda: I came to check up on you .

Me: First of all who let you in ?

Amanda: doesn't matter .

Me: you see I'm fine, now go.

I heard she left you and you know that you and me might get married so ...

Me: so I'll deal with that when it happens okay .

I close the door on her face . Arrhhhhggg I groan in frustration and ended up throwing down everything I see in my face . I want her . I need her . I'm not coping. I'm sorry . She doesn't deserve me. I can't even see her. Where is she ? I regret myself . Why did I do that to her ? Come back my love come back . I continued destroying everything I could see . Amanda banging the door hard .

Seconds later security opens and they forcefully held my arms trying to stop me from banging my head on the wall . I can't believe the tied my arms . I am now calm when my mother walks in

Mom: untie him

She runs to me and hugs me

Mom: my baby . I'm so sorry .

I'm crying on her shoulder like I've never cried before . My head is pounding. It's a lot . It really is lot coz looking back at what I had compared to what I will have equals pain I'll never forgive myself for.

49

Luyanda Pov

Right when I open the door I see a rope on her bed . Okay what is happening here ?

Luya: Pretty

I call her out in a warning voice .

Pretty : yeah I'm coming

She comes out wearing a towel only and her hair wet. I am awestruck by the beauty I see in front of my eyes I lost words in the process

Pretty: are you okay ?

Me: un..g

I sigh

She walk to a wardrobe and takes out a lotion.

Pretty: just get out if you gonna stand there I have things to do

Luya: oh (finally) um so the ...rope

"Oh that , can you give to the housekeeper when she comes "
she says lotioning her toned legs .

Me: okay

I take it to the kitchen and phewwww gosh ... Calm down
Luya calm down . She is pretty !! Damn damn . I don't know
how long I've been thinking but I get distracted by a knock . Oh
I almost forgot I ordered Pizza . I take them and pay then I go to
her room first knock .

"Come in " my heart started beating fast . I get nervous

Advertisement

I notice my hands are getting all sweaty . Gosh what is
happening to me . I clear my throat then walk in. She's by the
hair dresser brushing her hair

Pretty: and now what do you want ?

She looks at my reflection on the mirror running a hand on her
hair then takes a hair band taking hair tying it into a messy
ponytail . Some hair lay in front of her face . She sighs then the
small amount of air she exhales pushes the hair forward . Cute.
She strungs.

Me: umm...hh Food is ready . I ordered Pizzas

Pretty: thank you Mr. Can you bring them here coz I can't do
eating in the kitchen today I'm tired.

I'm staring at her lips and instantly wanna kiss then. They look so pink and yummy

I nod and go take the pizzas. When I get back she's already on her bed . Watching something on her laptop.

Me: one for you.

Pretty: but you have two boxes so unfair.

Me: I eat

Pretty : so ? I want two boxes also

She makes a puppy face arghhh I find myself falling for her act and eyes and her.... I try to act all normal on her

Me: first finish that one .

Pretty: but you got two boxes before you ate how unfair can that be.

Me: just eat

She had a grumpy face folding her arms . I don't care I ain't buying another one.

Me: can I watch the movie you're watching?

Pretty: no, first buy me another box

I sigh

Me: okay you win

I buy another box online and showed her .

She smiles and opened the blanket for me already eating her Pizza .

I take my shoes off then tuck in ,fixed my pillow so I can be comfortable then glanced at her. She's beautiful and flawless I just can't. But for the sake of our friendship I won't make a move

Me: so what are we watching?

Pretty:(she takes a bite) The note book . 😊 🍷

50

Pretty POV

I watch The notebook for the thousand time . Ahh I love this movie it's just that. I love it .

When it ends I am already in tears . Luya doesn't know what to do as always. I go to the bathroom to wipe my tears . Then come back

Me: let's watch it again

Luya: and have you crying again no thank you Friend.

I come back in bed securing my warm spot.

Me: you should go now . 4 boxes of large pizza are finished and movie is about to end so get out.

Luya: just like that?

Me: just like that friend

Luya: first can I ask a random question ?

Me: okay

Luya: how are you?

Me: me , well that's a random question indeed . I'm fine I think

Luya: like are you okay now coz in the morning you didn't even want to get out and I was worried.

Me: oh that. I was just going through the emotions nothing deep .

Luya: owk so you no longer think about him now

Me: what?

Luya: about him . You know who I'm talking about.

Me: I know ...well to answer that F I still do coz it's not easy . It's not an easy road to go . Continuously blaming myself for everything coz I feel like it was my fault . It was my fault that he got angry and beat me up

Luya: but it's not and you know it.

Me: I mean it's easy for you to say that and so wanna believe it ... Luya when you become a victim of abuse most of the time you feel like you're the cause especially when your partner points it out that you're the reason . Its not easy to think the way you think . Sometimes I look myself at the mirror and I feel like I've disappointed myself in every possible way . Like he got arrested and ... Living with that is hard . Yes I hate him well I try to hate him but ...it hard F like literally hard . I just don't know what to do with myself anymore you feel me .

I didn't notice that I had tears rolling down my cheeks until he wipes them.

Luya: I might not know the depth of the what he did but tell you what . He is an asshole

I chuckled.

Luya: really I mean you're too gorgeous for him to make you feel like that.

I chuckled again.

Me: you have no idea how that makes me feel. Coz wow you know when I look at myself in the mirror and be like I'm not beautiful enough I'd question myself almost all the time ba why did the Lord chose to make me . Why am I even living in this world coz look at me . Look at I'm ugly . Ugly ugly and Mihle made me realise that . I mean who likes a girl with stretch marks, thin no ass not boobs. You feel me . Like I just feel that way about myself and I hate it . Everyone is always reminding me of how resentful I am and also being pregnant is another story and having miscarriage is another one . You know if I didn't take the gun maybe my baby would still be alive. An opportunity to be a parent was taken away right infront of me . And it is my fault

I'm sorry to be bubbling like this .

-

I say nervously. He was literally looking at me throughout my speech while I spoke staring into the space in front of me.

-

Me: it's just that ...

Luya: no it's okay continue .

Me: nope let's hear your story .

Luya: what about me ?

Me: what's your sappy sad story ?

Luya: I don't have any .

Me: you lie

I nudge him with my shoulder chuckling ,he joined in too.

Luya: yho Pretty there is nothing I can think of.

Me: mmmh so when we get back at school you'll continue staying at the flats?

Luya: yeah yeah

Me: why don't you stay at your parents house?

Luya: (he clears throat) because of reasons ?

Me: and what are those reasons ?

Luya: can we talk about something else.

Me: seriously?

Luya: I just do not want to talk about my parents.

Me: why mind if I ask .

He sighs then gets out of bed.

I do the same.

Me: so I can confide in you but you can't with me, I thought we are friends.

Luya: yes but you can't force me to talk . I hate them and talking about them makes feel numb.

Me: you don't mean that .

I am standing next to the bed with my arms folded while he is just by the door .

Me: your parents give you money . All the time and what more do you want . You get everything you want .

Luya: but I do not get love , attention and affection

Ever since they started this "business" of theirs they became too busy for me . I know you might think that it's a privilege to have loaded parents . Do you know how it feels not to have a bond with your father. I mean a father is suppose to be the one closest to the son and advice them . But me I don't get that . I know I do have a dad but he's like dead to me because they are

not responsible enough to give their son attention. That's all I needed from them but they can't give me .

Tears involuntary escaped from his eyes . I am sad and so I walk to him and hug him giving him a tight embrace.

Me: it's okay ,it's okay .

I repeatedly pat his shoulder while he's crying on my shoulder. I get goosebumps because of the soft sobs he's making .

Me: they'll come around.

Last day

I pack everything that belongs to me when I pack the last piece of clothing . Luya walks in.

Luya: you're finished?

Me: yeah

I say zipping the suitcase .

Me: can you help me zip this thing . I sit on top of it you zip .
Right

I say doing exactly what I juhs said and walla the suitcase closes. He takes it to the boot while I follow taking pictures of him without knowledge . I took some selfies also .

On the way back he plays J Cole songs .

Best friend -J cole

~

"In time of need

You can lean on me

Come on, come on

I'll be there for you

Girl I can see it in your eyes

How you feeling , let me know whats on your mind

We've been together for a long long time

Hey, girl I can see it in your eyes

I know to you it feel like I'm never around

Round

round, round

But if you leave, who else gon hold me down

Hey, hey, hey, hey"

—

So it happens on the way the car brakes down .

Me: yhoo hayke ngok

Luya: let me go check the problem. Do not panic stay in the car
alright.

He goes out while I take my phone out to try get some help .
2% !!!! And it shuts down. Argh

Luya comes back . "There's no water and we ran out of petrol."

Me: petrol !! Luyanda how can you be so careless !!

Luya: you didn't remind me .

Me: well I don't drive

Luya: but you are in it !!

Me: now what are we gonna do ?

Luya: I don't know . Luyanda must come up with ideas now ha
you can't even think of anything . Seriously use your brain.

Me: is this because I got the losers award now that you say I
must use my brain.

Luya: no . I even forgot about that

Me: then why joke about that ?

Luya: haibo Pretty you're being unrealistic now .

Me: no I'm not

He put hands on his head.

Luya: are we gonna argue about nothing

Me: this is not nothing .

Luya: you are pathetic Yaz. Pretty I thought you weren't this
naive but clearly I was wrong .

—

What did he just say . Mxm I go to the boot to take my stuff .

Me: then don't talk to me, call or ...

Luya: where are you going?

Me: to my flat

Luya: you don't even know where we are .

Me: I'll find my way just like I'll find friends that dont think I'm pathetic and naive.

Luya: can you at least borrow me your phone coz mine died.

Me: sorry I don't want too.

Luya: mxm your so naive and pathetic.

Me: like I care .

I show him the middle finger while I wheel my suitcase . He takes his luggage and follows behind me .

We walk for about an hour . I'm so tired then houses start appearing . Okay so this is the beginning of town and our flats are at the end of town . No I can't deal ,I can't take it anymore.

Luya is struggling to breathe behind me because of the walk . I look at him

Luya: we can get in this yard .

Me: haibo do you know this yard don't act crazy here .

Luya: I am dying please . This is my parents house .

He coughs and tries to breathe heavily but fails. Astma . I think he collapses

I start to panick and press the button at the gate .

They open up and hurry to him . They do the breathing in his mouth thing he coughs . Thank you Lord he's alive . They give him asthma pump then we all walk in . The lady shows me the room I'll sleep in .

I go see him before going to sleep . He's alright , speaking and all

Me: I didn't know you had asthma

Luya: I comes once in while . That's why I don't do athletics.

We chat a bit more about sweet nothings . This guy right in front of me is the coolest.

He's super

I woke up. It's Sunday and tomorrow school reopens then in no time its final matric exams .

I have to work if I wanna pass good.

I sigh then I go to the bathroom to rinse my teeth . When I open the door someone is inside. She screamed I screamed too . She looks 40 somethingish and from her looks she resembles Luyanda .

Her: who are you !!

Me: who are you!!

I shouldn't have said that.

Her: get out.

I go out and I'm not sure I should wait or what

I go back to my room.

Later Luya call me out at the door .

Luya: there's someone I'd like you to meet

Me: hello to you too Luks.

He chuckle and closes the door for me.

I'm wearing sweatpants with a big T-shirt

When we reached the kitchen I notice the same woman I saw in the bathroom drinking Tea . She's plain . Black hair neatly tied back wearing a pink gown written Queen.

Her: you!!

Luya looks at us confused

Luya: you know each other .

Me: yeah ,it's kind of a bad first impression.

Her: exactly !! She has no manners this girl. How dare you walk on me pupping

I cut her short

Me: we were going to have a picnic with you mother so I guess we should start preparing for that .

Her: who are you ?

Me: I'm Pretty Molokai ma .

Her: Mmmm so who actually had this picnic idea. Because I have tones of work waiting for me .

Me: Luys . I'd also like to join . It's for our project at school.

She sulked.

Her: I'm giving you one hour of my time now hurry up I do have all day.

Luya pulls me to another room

Luya: what are you doing

Me: Bonding session with mama . Come help me prepare

I sighs in defeat .

Picnic

I brought puzzles and cards just games and food of course

"10 seconds left " I say when L. Mom was looking for the last piece .

L. Mom: found it !!

She puts it and we all clap in excitement

Luya: I go second .

The whole hour turns to hours were busy playing. I don't think she's as bad . We play cards

L. Mom: I remember you Mutsu you were so good in this.

Luya: I wasn't . I was good in chess ma. Can't believe you forgot .

L. Mom : no I haven't for example I know your favourite colour is green.

Luya: no it's white . Can we just play already.

Ok now the mood is ruined

51

It's Sunday morning and I lay on my bed thinking . About my life in general when I hear a knock on the door .

Me: come in

And that is Luyanda for you.

Me: what do you want?

Luya: so you're mad ?

Me: no I'm not .

Luya: but you sound grumpy . It's like I've done something wrong . You've been cold to me since yesterday .

Me: it's nothing .

I lay on my stomach and fix my pillar so I can lay my head probably.

He chuckled

Luya: so this is about Friday I see . Look I get that you now hate Bonke but she means nothing to me . Chill .

Something in my heart kinda felt relaxed after he said that .

He opens the fridge and take apple then lays next to me .

Luya: so you're gonna ignore me .

I keep quiet

Luya : okay then Imma watch you .

He indeed stares at me then played with my ear . It feels good then stops I turn to look at him .

He chuckles . Mxm

He then traces his fingers on my back slowly up and slowly down my spinal cord . I close my eyes and let the feeling overtake me.The feeling a quick excitement and enthusiasm takes over me.I'm even feeling drowsy even. I didn't realise I let out a soft moan.

Luya: caba ndenza lamnandi Nah(it feels good?)

He stops . I'm so embarrassed why why why did I have to do that

Me: why did you stop ? !

He chuckles again

Luya: I'm hungry. Let's go eat out. It's my treat.

I want him to continue with what he was doing. Argh he's such a mood breaker.

At KFC

Luya: so what did you apply for ?

Me: I hate that question but anyways I applied for Medicine at UCT but guess what I'm rejected you?

Luya: Medicine same here

Me: and

Luya: provisionally accepted. But don't feel bad about being rejected sure next year they might consider you . I mean you're not that bad.

Me: not that bad Luks a whole losers Award winner

Luya: listen to me when I say to you. You are smart. I mean when we were doing math it's wasn't that hard explaining and you knew a lot of stuff . I guess it was because at that time you wrote there was a lot you were going through but now there's nothing troubling you . So what's holding you back ?

—

I see his point

—

Me: nothing

Luya: exactly

He takes a piece from my food .

Me: na-h where is yours ?

Luya: finished please F

Me: if you can order more coz I want more too.

Luya: can I take now?

Me: yes food killer

He chuckles at the nickname I gave him .

Me : can't believe you finished 5 pieces alone

He goes to order but before that he kisses my cheek

Luya: thanks F . Ndiyakuthanda Yaz Wena (I love you)

Me: I love you too F

I think I mean that the other way round. But it's still too early.

Right then I see Mihle annoyed As F . I could see he's furious and he can't do anything about that coz of the restriction I set . The restraining order against him I mean.

He walks out as quickly as he came in .

Luya smirks

Me: you did that on purpose

Luya: what ? No I didn't

And he goes to order and comes back with more pieces.

Luya: the guy you're so obsessed about is getting married. Ever heard of that ?

Me: yeah and I know it's not happening . It's been a whole year but they aren't married yet so what makes me believe that Amanda and Mihle will eventually get married. Please

Luya: really ? So it happens that the money he owed.

Me: that 20 million

Luya: he couldn't make it coz he was busy "building security" and now he has to take over his dad's legacy everything plus marry Amanda Sondle which is Ghosts sister, the Bozz . Yeah

Me: wow that's too much.

Luya: I know hey . But bastard he deserves it.

Me: I'm thinking I'm dropping the charges .

Luya: what!! And let him win .

Me: God has a way to punish his people. The restraining order is still going to be on but I'll drop charges.

Luya: you have a good heart Yaz

Me: no .

Luya: I don't think other people would do that . After everything . And that another reason I love you.

Ahhh my heart is melting.

Me: let's just eat

Luyanda: you were still telling me about your second choice of study

Me: military

We laugh that off

Me: I dead serious

We continue laughing

When we finish he asks me to accompany him to his home. We take a cab and got there . It's a bit cloudy I'm thinking it will rain soon .

Me: so why are we here ?

Luya: I don't know but I just felt like coming here

He give me a brief smile and walks as I follow him .

He walks around more like admiring the place .

Luya: I partly grow up here. Looking at this walls brings back the memories of this house filled with laughter and happiness.

[Brief pause]

That was when I had a sister. But she died because she had rape. She was gang rapped when she was at a daycare and died.

She was only Three years old. An adorable smart kid who knew everything there is to know . Sometimes I just miss her and today is her birthday .13 October .

He tries to smile but fails .

Me: Im so sorry F

Luya: Nah don't worry I forgave them too you know.

Me: what was her name?

He smiles . And it starts raining hard

Luya: Rose Angella Masango

Me: that is a cute name.

Luya: I know hey.

He strungs.

Luya: there's nothing we can do now just memories.

It starts lightening . I scream . You have no idea how much I hate lightening

Me: I'm gonna go sleep coz I can't deal with the light.

Luya: need comfort ?

Me: please.

We walk upstairs while he starts a new topic ,parenting weird I know and I get in covers of the room I took that day and

Me: can we watch a movie ?

Luya: cool

It lightens ,I close my eyes and hide my self with the blanket.

Me: tell me when its gone.

Luya: mnk!!

He gets under cover and take out remote . Coz there's already TV here .

Luya: which movie ?

Me: me before you.

Luya: okay coming right way.

Duuuu duuu

Luya holds on me tight .

Luya: lay here on my chest

I look up at him and did just that. I'm even shivering.

Me: switch off the TV and the mirror . There's no reflection that's suppose to show when it's lighting . Xhosa belief

Luya: nothing is going to happen chill

He chuckles . We stay like that for a long time till I doze off . I woke up he's no where to be found and so I get up and see myself in the mirror. Wow is that me ? I look kind of pretty .

I stand and go look at the mirror . I think I am beautiful but not quite sure.

I didn't notice Luya standing behind me. I am shocked and he quickly holds me gently on my arms

Luya: don't be afraid. It's just me F

He says with a whisper on my ears. With just that it sends shivers down my spine . My heart starts getting excited jumping up and down . He hasn't even touched me it's just a whisper .

Luya: you see how beautiful you are ?

I nod

Luya: an angel . Dark brown eyes that everytime I look at them I lose my consciousness . I lose myself in them

your small biggish lips are just gorgeous. And those chubby kissable cheeks are back again

—

I giggle at that statement. He smiles and then kisses them .

Luya: just admiring the beauty I see in front of my face .

He then breathes on my neck slowly slowly then his hands traces down on my back without hurry . I find myself breathing hard . He chuckles . Worse I'm wearing no panty and I'm just wearing a big T-shirt . That's because I wasn't going anywhere . Well to my expectations .

——

Then he gets his hand under the shirt . I am literally breathing very hard now . Taking breath every millisecond . He brushes my skin

"No panty" I feel embarrassed a bit but he must not worry about that. Continue with what you're doing

He gently takes off the T shirt it feels so slow coz I want him now and every piece of him against my body . He again traces his hands on my stomach . Im in front of the mirror with my eyes shut . Then he plants wet kisses on my shoulder while he's playing with my boobs, rubbing them slowly especially with the nipples . Then turns me to him . He smashes his lips on me and

grabs me to the bed then kisses my neck while his other hand goes way down to my pussy . He plays with my clit while making soft kisses on my neck . Then he gets his head down down and starts to lick my clit with his tongue again and again. I am speechless. He does that fast and continuously then pushes then tongue in making circles around me. I am wet wet now. This making soft moans while he groans And so goes back to kissing my stomach my boobs, he puts one finger in I moan soft while he rotates his finger on me in smooth circles . He put another finger and does that for a good minute, he goes slow at first then goes in deeper and faster. In and out. In and out . In and out repeatedly I am now screaming his name out loud

Me: Luya!!!! Please don't stop

Harder baby !!!

Then he stops when I am about to cum.

I look at him

Luya: we were going to watch a movie right "Friend" .

He's not serious right now.

Luya: wear your T-shirt please

And off he goes to the bathroom .

Luyanda Pov

Fuck I got her good. I want her and her only. Wish I could fuck that tight pussy of hers for years but for now let's watch the movie she wanted.

I rinse my hands

52

Luyanda's pov

When I get back from the bathroom she's got her TShirt on and there's wine next her Awww she's drinking her sorrows away .

Ohhh

She's shy to look at me .

Pretty: um Luya

Me: huh?

Pretty: can you please ... Umm ...I mean ahhhhhh ... You want wine?

Me: sure.

I see she bought more snacks and theres too much of peanuts. Does she know what peanuts does to one. I take the wine and take a gulp.

Me: so we're watching the movie?

Pretty: can we ...umm ..I mean ...

She take a gulp

Pretty : nevermind .

I can see she's a little bit tipsy

Me: I think you should stop drinking now.

She looks at me with sexy eyes full of lust .

Pretty: I don't want to

She takes the wine and drinks it. I take it back to me when she's about to protest then put it on the side bed ,she protests

Pre: I wa-I smash my lips against hers. Her mouth is taste like wine and peanuts . I'm sure mine tastes the same .

Pretty PoV

Just what I wanted . Back to square one I love it I love it . I responded to his kiss warmly

he occasionally pulls my lower lips gently with his teeth . I giggle in between . He pulls out .

Luya: so what do we call this ?

Me: were more than friends. Luyanda I don't wanna lie. I think I am in love with you. I know it's too early to say that but that just it. I love you . More than just a friend like a boyfriend .

Luya:I have waited so long ,to hear those words come out of that cute mouth of yours. Now what do you want me to do you to you?

—

I'm so horny y'all have no picture I've never been this horny before I need that dick right now.

Me: I want to ride you as in now

Luya: oh I like I like.

He kisses me again then I wait while he inserts a condom . He's taking forever. I can't wait any longer as soon as he is done I grab him and put my legs around him. Then he first plays around my v-j is he's gonna do that really .

I literally begging him to put in already then a hard material enters in v-j the walls are still kinda thin and it's hard for it get in completely.

I scream in both pain and pleasure.

Luya: one last push

I scream again ,then finally . He goes out slowly the pain and pleasure is just too good to be true . I love this . He pounds in and out slow at first in and out in and out in and out faster .

Me: ahhh !!

I have my hands on his bare back pushing him to go harder.

Me: deeper !!

He pounds way faster and my heart beat and excitement going to the climax. I cum then he goes second the we stop to catch our breath.

He kisses my shoulder

Luya: I love you .

Me: I love you too .

He smiles at me

Luya: let's go take a shower.

Luyanda Pov

She agrees and when she walks in front of me I spank her little cute ass

Pretty: ouch (she says that in a sexy voice)

I smirk on that one .

We get in to the shower . The water is so relaxing and cool . I can't take my eyes off her. It's her that I see her beauty and all. I hold her waist .

Pretty: were showing baby

Me: so ? I want to take you right here and right now. You don't want that ?

Pretty: I do actually

She pecks my lips and I kiss her back hungrily and passionately like I've never kissed before . I grabbed her and her legs are all over my waist . I go in deeper and harder this time .

With her moaning

And I groaning

Hearing her scream my name

Is music to ears

I have long wanted for this day to come . I just didn't know how to approach her.

It's Monday . Exams start but it's CAT and we ain't doing that subject so we'll sleep in . I wake up next to the most beautiful creature on earth . Pretty Molokai. I kiss her shoulder then down by her spinal cord . I don't wanna wake her up so I stop and admire what is in front of me .

She slowly opens her eyes .

Me: hey beautiful

She opens her eyes wide.

Pretty: shit !!

She puts hands on her face .

Pretty: it's not what I think it is ?

Me: it is.

Pretty: this is a huge mistake. I shouldn't have ... you're my friend and

She looks under cover and noticed were both naked .

Pretty: oh gosh .

Me:chill Pretty we talked about this .

Pretty: most probably that was the wine talking .

Me: please don't ruin this. Look . Look me in the eye .

She does but looks worried.

Me: I love you and I am willing we become an item.

She sighs out.

Pretty: is this a dream or what ?

She looks in doubt and I am afraid of her answer.

Pretty: no no no this is one big mistake. Just imagine . I fuck with thee best friends. You were Mihles friend and I can't have

me dating you I mean . It's absurd and also its still finals exams they just started and I wanna be focused .

Me: I understand but as for Mihle were no longer friends don't worry .

Pretty: but still

Me: don't worry about what people will say . I just want to Happy with you . Please give me a chance

Pretty: I'm sorry if I led you on. Probably couldn't control myself but I can't deal with being in a relationship right now.

Please give me time.

Me: okay I understand can we at least have another round . The last one

Pretty: you're sick in the head.

She raps the shirt on her body. I love her . Soo much I'm willing to wait for her even .

53

We hire a cab back and when we walk in the boys are chilling at the stoep then they make whistles once we get at the gate. She seems uncomfortable but these one's don't care.

Thami: haibo and then?

Me: I don't wanna talk about it .

Thami : and then Sis ? Pretty girl ? You disappear he also disappears

Pretty: fuck you Thami .

She shows him her middle finger and gets in her room.

Thapelo: and then ? Trouble in paradise or it wasn't paradise at all

They all laugh and I'm here sulking

Me: shut up man

Thapelo: you gave her bad ne ? umfonyozi

Me: shut the fuck up man Thapelo before I cut your throat out man . NX (,I click my tongue)

I walk to my room too.

Pretty finally dropped the charges and were done with exams and all so I'm gonna get my girl now . She's been ignoring me all the time talks with me when its necessary and the boys . Yhoo those one's.

Prettys POV

I got a call from mom

Mom: hey mntanam

Me: someones in a great mood

Mom: yes mntanam. You're coming home moss today. I cooked a feast just for you.

Me: can't wait to go home .

Mom: nanku uKuhle (he's Kuhle)

Kuhle : Mntase !!!

Me: unjani Mntase !!

Kuhle: cool everything is alright .

"Yeyyy uyaphi nalo phone wena ?" -where are you going with that phone.

Kuhle: Hima mama ... Soo Mntase mom finally accepted.

Me: what ?

Kuhle: That I'm gay !!

He screams I block my ears .

Me: that great Mntase so tell me about this boyfriend of yours

.

Kuhle: I'll tell you when you get here.

Me: okay ke mntaks give mom the phone .

Kuhle: not even a goodbye .

Me: no no brother don't worry I'll see you soon .

Mom: Nana goodbye ke sanalwam .

Me: mom . Thank you . I don't think I ever thanked you before but thank you so much for being a caring parent . For loving us for trying your best to be a good mom . I'm like this today because of you and I think it's about time I appreciate you .

Mom: ohh mntanam

"Mama cela uthetha nam " -can I speak too-

Me: hello Milisa .

Mil: hello sis Pretty

Me: unjani umilili Mili

She giggles

Mil: I'm fine

Me: how's school?

Mil: good .

Me: ohh bye ke milimili wasekhaya (our milimili)

Mil: bye .

_ I beam after the call _

I record almost everything I do in my diary on my phone so I update it .

In my whole 5 years I've learnt that self love is more important than anything else. In order to love other people you first have you love yourself and love every inch in your body . I love me . I stand proud and tall on that one .

I hear a knock at the door . Bonke .

Me: yeah ?

Bonke: so ?

Me: so what?

Bonke: you're seriously gonna take my man away from me .

Me: excuse me ?

Bonke : you heard me .

Me: listen. I have enough self value to go around hoeing with every man I see. Look at me I am Pretty Molokai The girl with self worth it actually depends . The girl who smiles , the girl who is beautiful . I repeat I am Pretty the pretty

stop being petty coz it ain't cute for a second.

I notice a mecediz Benz at the gate . This is the last day and yet so many visitors.

Bonke: you won't win this.

Me: I don't mind losing so girl I ain't no ones competition so breathe .

I leave her there while I go attend the visitor. It's M.mom

Me: hello ma

M.mom: hello my child .

Me: hi

M. Mom: umm I won't take long but I came to a sorry for putting you in that situation and for what I made you go through and mntanam I am sorry on behalf of Mihle . He's deeply sorry about what he has done. Ever since you left he's never been happy and I'd love it if maybe you can be the

second wife. He is marrying Amanda in two weeks just because he has no choice . Please mntanam

Me: I never settle for second best ma and even if so I would not go back to Mihle . Yeah I forgive you for all you've done to me and what Mihle did but I don't see myself back with him again. Besides I'm seeing someone else now .

She looks at me disappointed

M. Mom: hayke mntanam it's that Mihle calls on you every single day and I thought I should just come maybe you'll change your mind .

Me: nope

I see Siphos Car. The one that we left by the road . It's all fine now.

Me: I have to go get dressed I have a date . If you'll excuse me .

Luya is already hooting while Mihles mom same as Bonke leave.

Luyanda Pov

I wait for her to wear an outfit for the date. I myself am wearing shorts and a white shirt. You see those formal like shorts yeah them and when she comes out my jaw drops . She's simple yet beautiful . It's white floral dress with a necklace hair tied into a bun. Pumps but she's beautiful .

I opened the door for her and she smiles at me then I drive to. Y'all already know by now . KFC .

I love the meat she loves the meat we love the meat .

So I order 10 pieces. And milkshakes

Me: so we're just waiting for results

Pretty: yeah

Me: and my response. You know I love you and I can't take it anymore.

Pretty: lets wait for results.

Me: ne you want me to wait forever

Pretty: no I mean Luya you can have any girl you like I mean uBonke digs you straight and you don't see that . Why me

Me: because you're kind , you are sweet , you don't throw yourself at boys . You know me from inside and out. You're my best friend. Partner in crime. There's no one knows me like you

do like literally. I love how you smile. How you say "Luya " when we have sex

-she blushes-

How you blush. Your style. Your ego. Your stubbornness is a little bit sexy .

How you sigh

How beautiful you look when you're stressed out

How you are when you wake up .

I love how much you value people but mostly how you value yourself which is the most important thing and a huge turn on for me in a woman. If it went by me I would be asking your hand in marriage.

She blushed then chuckles I join along.

Pretty: I'm too young to get married thou.

Me: I know but I don't know what we are waiting for.

Pretty: first first of all . I know this might sound bad but I'm giving you the blessing to be with any girl you want be it Bonke be it Lisa I don't know but I think it's really stupid to block someone's happiness just because "it's my ex" what if you're soulmates.

Me: my soulmate is right in front of me.

Pretty: okay Luyanda Masango

Me: okay what .

Pretty: I'll be your girl.

Me: that's music to my ears . I can't wait to have you right now right here.

Pretty : let's get out if here.

Me: picture ?

She pouts I pout we look so cute . I take it and put it as wallpaper and send her one as well.

We hire a cab and I can't hold myself any longer .

My home it is . It's peaceful there there's no one who will disturb .

As soon as I open the door I attack her with a passionate kiss. She puts her hand on my shorts and grabs my dick . I feel my legs failing me she rubs it Soo good. And I'm already on already . I am weak while I try plant kisses on her boobs. I undress her and take her right here on the dinner table. She's lying on her back while I slowly eat her pussy out. I kiss it continuously putting my tongue in deeper she starts to shake I put two fingers in . She screams my name again just the way I like itand the rest is history . We take a shower and have another hot steamy session 🔥👉. She's flames fire .

After some time we are now cuddling and watching . You guessed it right. The notebook .

I kiss her neck she moans

Me: i get into you easy neh?

She looks at me with those sexy eyes and holds my waist resting her head on my chest . I can hear her heart beat and mine are the same pace. I wish this moment never ends. I kiss her forehead

Me: I don't wanna lose you . You know that

Pretty: you wont lose me I promise. Even if I die I'll always be with you .

She pecks my lips.

Im so lucky and so we continue watching.

It's Saturday my baby is going back home so I accompany her with her bags . I want to go too.

Me: can I tag along I'll say I am gay .

~

We are now crossing the road .

54

We were at the kitchen packing things from where they were .

"So mom can maybe have another picnic tomorrow ? " Luya asked packing the picnic bag in the cupboard.

L.mom: I'm sorry honey but I have another meeting tomorrow and I have to fly back today . I'll call you sometimes

Luya rolled his eyes

Luya: and dad? When is he coming back ?

L.mom looks at me indicating that they need privacy.

Luya: whatever you want to say .you can say it in front of her .

I was quite shocked .

L. Mom: okay , your father is not coming back for another year but I promise he'll be back after that .

Luya sighs

L.mom: this time he'll come around . Seriously

Luya: okay mom . Thanks for the information. Pretty let's go pack our clothes and leave this hellhole.

He pulls my arm and I look at L.mom with pity and shame.

—

We pack and L.mom offers us a lift to the flats .

And we're back .

It's pretty empty outside , so probably the tarven closed down or something coz there's noise every day here .

I go back to my room and phewwww what a nice holiday but anyways I'm back .

Monday

It's school I prepare myself and I'm supper early and fortunate enough Thapelo walks with me to school .

Yeah they are still here . Thapelo is a 20 year old guy based on on our latest chat and hes only continuing with school because he wants education .

Thapelo: I couldn't finish my matric coz i was facing issues then . I tried again last year but failed but this year I am confident I'll pass right through

Me: chissaa Wena . You ,me same WhatsApp group we're passing no matter what .

He smirks revealing a dimple.

Thapelo: exactly

School was school , with final exams coming up

Advertisement

we as matrices in our block will be having a group study . Every second day of the week at the kitchen. I'm the only girl.

It's Me

Sipho

Thami

Thapelo

Luyanda

Yeah that's us

And I am cooking so we start doing this today .

When I get back to the flats I went to cook straight away for everyone. Just a simple stew and rice .

At 07:00 we all eat at the kitchen joking around

Me: so guys when am I getting paid coz this work I do ain't easy

.

Thami: Luya was going to pay . I ain't doing that .

Me: so unfair why does he have to pay?

Thami: ohh so you're protecting your boyfriend

Luya chuckles

Me: he's not my boyfriend.

Thapelo: says the lady who went on a "baecation" .

I hit his arm softly

Me: you gotta stop

Thapelo: I mean as a guy I wouldn't take any girl to a vacation but we ain't an item . I'm sure he even gave some

Me: what ewwweee Luya is friend okay nothing happened .

Luya tell them

Luyanda POV

Hearing Pretty speak like that really hit home . Is that how she sees me , as a friend . Only that not even best friend. Well on my case

Me: yeah we're just best friends guys nothing special.

She gave me a stare , I stare at her back smirking

Thapelo : I don't believe it at all .

My eyes are itchy more like glassy when she brakes of the stare

Pretty: I'll be doing the dishes

She collets dishes around and when she gets at mine she lifts her eyes up and they land straight into mine then she takes my plate .

Me: I'll help you .

We wash dishes together in awkward silence.

"Look at them " says Sipho .

" So cuteee" and that's Thapelo ,he's such a pain in the ass I mean didn't he hear what she said. She sees me as a friend .

After that we study . I am tutoring Maths and anyone else is welcome to fill in where I can't .

Me: so we'll do excise 3 in trig

I go around helping everyone who needs help and I see she's struggling and so I walk to her and stand over her shoulder .

Me: need help?

Pretty: no I'm doing just fine

Me: but your step 3 is suppose to be like Sin cos - cos

—

Pretty PoV

Guys ever had that pressure where a person is standing right over your shoulder and when they move even if Tshirt touches your neck in small piece you shiver . Just imagine when they do it continuously, not on purpose thou and he's breathing on neck a little bit. My heart races . I'm not suppose to feel like this . He's my friend.

A week passes and I must say in my whole entire life I haven't studied like I did this week . I haven't grasped as much as I did this week . All has been too much but worth it I think . So it's Friday and the guys decided on throwing a party just imagine .

Yho hayke we organise everything from food to booze.

Everyone at school is talking about it and now is the time. I'm checking in people who paid . After a while someone takes over so I go get myself a drink and set on the couches and guess what Luyanda grinding on Bonke . My heart broke into pieces gosh I thought ...I walked straight on them .

Me: what are two doing ?

Luya: what?

He's drunk like drunk drunk

Me: we agreed that you'll stop messing with her .

Luya: you can't control me . You're my friend remember ? If I can't mess with you then leave me alone . I can fuck who I want

.

I watch him grab Bonke's hand outside . I went to sit and felt like crying coz that's the truth . I can't control him .

Epilogue

Luyanda's Pov

I stare at her phone looking through our pictures. She's dead . I still can't believe it . I just can't

I am crying all the way to her family's home. They heard too . When I get there her mom gives me the warmest embrace and shows me my own room . Okay it's different this time around. It's all quite . The funeral goes by quickly and Prettys mom makes me feel at home so I'm more like her second son. She finds out I'm not gay. Eventually she would have. And that I dated her. I don't tell her details. When the results come her certificate also comes out.

And this is how she did

English: 92

Xhosa : 83

Maths 81

Life sciences: 78

Geography: 76

Life orientation: 80

Physical science: 84

I'm so proud of my friend. Only if she was here with me so we can celebrate together. Oh as for me I got called out for the Provincial Award

7 distinctions all the way

And Mihle 6 distinctions

Amanda one for L. O she passed with a D

Lisa : none but still managed to get a D. Last term she got physics

Bonke: none but passed with B

Melissa: none but passed with H

I don't know what happened but that's it. Maybe they relaxed too much .

-

-

-

I take out her phone. Yeah I still have it and were having a braai as a family in celebration of her results. I stroll through our pictures when I exit the gallery I noticed an app . It's a diary . I try the pin a couple of times . Locked. Mxm I just write my name .like hell it will open and guess what it does

There's a piece she wrote . It reads as follows.

-

-

I am Pretty Molokai .

Seventeen year old girl

Doing her 12th year

at Mariazell at Matatiale

Its a boarding school.

The me before:

Back at home I live with my mom ,dad,sister and brother. I am originally from Queenstown . I didn't want to come to this school as a result I suffered depression in Grade 8 . I am still going though the emotions thou.

The me after:

I've been through at lot from facing depression to being the bubbly me that I am today. I learnt that

Advertisement

where you need help ask. There are people out there who are more than will to help. For example Luyanda Masango. He's been my pillar ,my comfort my strength a best friend that is very rare to find. He cares supports gives courage and I thank God for bringing such people in my life .

The me before :

I am kinda skinny I donot have much boobs,ass nor hips. I usually feel left out because everyone just seems perfect and I am not . I have Friends who are jus perfect. I am not a head girl or anything like that . I am not even top of class I an such a loser .

The me after:

Yes I am skinny and small but I love myself. The way I am. All the 165 cm of my body are gorgeous and beautiful. I may not be perfect but I know I satisfy myself the way I am . I know I am pretty and I think a lot of girls may feel competition amongst themselves because of beauty and also having the pressure to feel pretty for a boy . Girllllll you are worth more than that . You don't need the make up to make him notice you. If he doesn't see you the way you are girl . You deserve better . Leave him there are plenty of people out there who you can chose from.

Me before:

I am Friends with my Friends because I help them with homework. I attend an English Club and I am the leader there. My life is dull

Me after:

I've learnt that do not let people bully you and you don't have to have a bunch of friends to be happy. I've been a punching bag for too long and it's only now I realise how stupid I was for thinking that I have to have friends. Good Friends come when the time is right . I learnt I didn't need Friends who don't appreciate me for being me . People who don't care for you at all. If you got that one person who you feel they are just a parasite in your life and there's literally nothing you're gaining for having them . Leave them . People who gossip behind your back leave them. God has a plan for you and it's bigger than you expect.

Me before:

Sometimes I just wish I could ...die coz I feel I don't make an Impact.

Me after

I don't wanna die just yet . I feel like a still have a lot to live for . A lot I can learn . I wanna touch people's live in any manner I can think off. I wish the Lord blesses me with more days coz of...my dreams.

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>